

# The ROGUE:

OR,  
THE LIFE  
OF

*Guzman de Alfarache,*  
The Witty Spaniard.

---

IN TWO PARTS.

---

Written in SPANISH,  
By *Matheo Aleman*,  
Servant to His Catholick Majesty.  
and born in *Sevil*.

---

*The Fifth and last Edition, Corrected.*

---

LONDON:

Printed by J. C. for Philip Chetwind; and are  
to be sold by Tho: Johnson, at the Golden  
KEY in S. Pauls Church-yard.

M. D. LV.



THE BIBLE



## The Publisher to the R E A D E R.

**Y**OU have here a History that scorns the Name of Fiction; wherein you may discover Guzman's Education, his going from his Mothers house, his Roguish life, and the Miseries that ensued; he was purified in the Furnace of Tribulation; the harvest of his sins yielding him more encrease of Woes, then the follies of his youth afforded him Pleasures. Idleness is an Ant-trap of sin, to the top of which having reached, he went like a Torrent whither passion transported him, and where the blast of his Ambition breathed, sailing with as many various thoughts, as Eolus sent out winds upon the Trojan Fleet. At last he purposes to practise a Religious state, and (knowing Religion to be the Hive where the Honey of good Doctrine is made) intended to become a Churchman; thereby erecting Trophies of his own dishonour, and covering his Ulcer with a Golden Veil. After some time which he profusely spent, he writes his own Life from aboard the Gallies, where he was put to the OAR. He was advantag'd much by Learning, and debas'd

## To the Reader.

as much by Time ; the one pitied, and the other punished. He was a violent stream, that being once run out, the mud appeared at the bottom : Always rich in his enormous Wit ; the relation of which I am sure cannot but content : and (without any derogation from my modesty be it spoken) though Guzman was before much read, as much liked ; he may be now more read, and much more liked then ever.

Farewel.

---

THE

---



# THE ROGVE:

OR,

The first part of the Life of  
GUZMAN *de* ALFARACHE.

---

The First Book.

---

CHAP. I.

*Guzman declareth his descent, and who was his father.*



Endeavor not by laying open the weakness of my Ancestors, to hide my own; knowing it is the birth of vile and base thoughts, to seek to grace themselves, by disgracing others. My fathers life was so well known, and all that he did so manifest to the world, that to deny it were meer folly. Therefore I am perswaded I shall do a most remarkable curtesie to my Reader in expressing the pure and naked truth. First then, take no-

A

# The Life of Guzman

tice that my father, and his kindred, were a kind of upstart Gentlemen, that came out of the *Levant*, who having no certain residence, came at length to settle in *Genoa*; his Traffick and gain by which he maintained himself, was according to the common custom of that Country, namely Usury, Money-banks, and profitable exchange of Gold and Silver. But bad fortune found him out. A Partner of his in *Sevill*, being broken, and turned Bankrupt, ran away, and carried with him great sums of money that were his; he pursued him, as well to recover so great a loss, as to settle some other business did much concern him. The ship he went in, was set upon and taken, by some *Algier* men of War; and he, together with the rest were made captives; where fearing he should never purchase his liberty, and despairing of procuring his monies, for quietness sake, he fairly renounced his Religion and turned *Turk*. There he married a *Moor*, a woman of a perfect beauty and principal rank. In the interim, my fathers Partner, willing to secure himself from after-claps, and to live out of danger, laboured to take order with his Creditors, and compound for his Debts: this news came to my fathers ear, and he purposed to come away with all the secrecie and diligence he could possible: and the better to deceive the *Moor* his wife, he told her he would employ himself in matters of Merchandize, which would turn much to his profit; he made money of most that he had, and putting it into *Chekines* (a certain coin made of fine *Barbary* Gold) taking with him all the Jewels he could finger, leaving her alone, and very poor, he

posted

Guzmans  
father taken prisoner.

He turns  
Turk, and  
marries a  
Moor.

Guzmans  
father  
sends from  
Algier.

possed away privately, reducing himself to the faith of *Jesus Christ*, repenting for his Apostacy with tears. After he had performed some favorable penance inflicted on him, he indeavoured the recovery of his debts. And this was the chief cause why he was never afterwards trusted, nor would his neighbors have any charitable opinion of him, were his works never so good, saying, as they have often since to me, *Once a knave, and alwayes a knave.*

That I might not make a further discovery of my fathers qualities, I could willingly silence my thoughts : but I will in this follow the Philosophers counsell, *Amicus Plato, sed magis amica veritas*: *Plato* is my friend, but the truth more : my father for his Apostacy, was apprehended and imprisoned, although there were sufficient proofs and evidences brought against him ; and such suspicions to induce belief, as might have procured him an infamous reward ; yet because he was rich, and ( as some say ) for that he had an *Alcade* to his father, and a Notary to his Gossip, he by that means came off, and was acquitted. (Having performed his penance) he came to *Sevil* to recover his debt; but in vain had been all his endeavors, had he not fairly cleared himself of being a *Renegado* : means were used on both sides, composition offered, but not accepted ; the one is unwilling to pay, as the other to lose : he gathered up as much as he could, and was once more master of a plentiful fortune : he built him a handsom house, and sought to plant and settle himself in those parts, by his purchase of free land ; he had a Garden in *San Iuan Alfarache*, of much recreation and

Guzmans  
father  
compounds  
with his  
creditors  
grows rich,  
& takes  
his pleasure.

# The Life of Guzman

Guzmans  
mother a  
handsom  
wench.

pleasure, especially in the Summer time, and situate about halt a League from *Sevill*. My father walking with other Merchants upon the Burse, there chanced a Christening to pass by, and as report went, this child was said to be Bastard son to a person that shall be nameless; my father followed in the rear of the troop, and passed to the very Font to view my mother, who with a certain old Knight (that lived by the Rents of the Church to maintain the honor of his Order) were partners in this Ceremony. She was a lively wench, her carriage graceful, and full of curtesie, her self young, beautiful, discreet, and of good behaviour. He earnestly beheld her all the time the exercise of that Sacrament permitted him; the fair creature could not but take notice of my fathers greedy eying of her, and did rejoyce therein. At this time there passed no more betwixt them, only my father came to know that she was that Knights Lady of pleasure; of her he was very zealous, and so tenderly affected, that he hardly suffered her out of his sight. The Gentlewoman went directly to her house, and left my Father very disconsolate: and unless she went forth to Mass upon solemn Feast-dayes, notwithstanding his extraordinary diligence, he could never have the honor of her sight.

My father used for his purpose the assistance of a good old Beldam, an honest Baud, one of my charitable Aunts: this old sinner was by him courted with words, and rewarded with mony, to pass and repass with papers; this mother of mischief acted so well her part, that her diligence meeting in a happy conjuncture with  
the

the forwardness of my mothers will, she adding more fuel to the fire, of a little light stubble raised in a short time a terrible flame. My mother (as I said) was a discreet woman; but not alwayes in one mind; she was sometimes on, sometimes off. Whom will not Silver win? who will not Gold corrupt? this Knight was by fifteen yeers older than my father, much subject to spitting, spawling, and coughing; he was troubled with the stone, sharpness of his Urine, and other the like infirmities; he appeared not the man my father promised to be; he had not that vigor, liveliness, nor that beauty of shape and proportion. Novelties please all, especially women; she was resolved to have forsaken the old Knight, and break loose, and questionless had done so, if her Pension had not restrained her; the loss of it did somewhat perplex her, who otherwise had bin very willing: for that lesson my father read but once unto her, the Devil repeated ten times over; so that it was now no great matter to win *Troy*, there was likelihood to take it in less than ten yeers. She consulted of divers wayes to answer the greedy expectations of my father; at last she had recourse to her Baudy Embassadess concerning the manner how, and the time when: but finding it impossible to effect her desires in her own house, among many other shifts, witty devices, and strange plots which they used for the better success in the business, they made choice of this which followeth.

The Spring had so far advanced it self, that *May* was in its ending, & the Summer was now taking its entrance. The City of *Gelves*, and that



# The Life of Guzman

of *San Juan de Alfara* are now the sweetest and most pleasant of all that bordering territory, besides the goodness of the soil, which that river of *Guadalquivir* makes the more famous, so excellently set forth with curious shadow-casting trees, beautified with bowers, accompanied with Silver streams, clear springs, and such delightful shades, that the beams of the Sun are oft times denied entrance at one of these retiring rooms of recreation. My mother agreed with her *sine qua non*, and some of the people of her house to make merry. The place whither they were to go, was not that, of which my father was owner, but was beyond it, nearer unto *Gelvez*: yet perforce they must pass close by our door: The agreement concluded betwixt them. Just about the time she came near unto our Garden Gate, my mother began presently to complain of a sudden and grievous pain in her stomach, imputing the cause to the coldness of the morning and the freshness of the weather. She feigned such extremities of torture, made such pitiful faces, and woful gestures, holding her hands as hard as possibly she could upon her belly; then would she let them loose again, and clasp them together, wringing each finger through anguish of her pain, so that she was taken down from her (a) *Xamuga*, which for her ease was born by a little, but sure-footed (b) *Sardinian Ass*: she fell to unlacing her self, fainting as if she were ready to swoon, that all that were about her (those excepted which were privy to the plot) had a compassionate feeling of her affliction; nay some did melt into tears, and believed her mightily tormented. Divers passengers in

(a) A woman's saddle with a chair.

(b) A Sardinian Ass of Asses the least.

in the interim passed by, and every one proposed his remedy; so many men, so many medicines. To goe back into the City, it was impossible; to go forward, dangerous; and to abide thus in the high-way, not commodious. Her fits increased, and amazed all the Spectators. At last, one (who was laid there for the purpose) breaks in amongst them, and in the preas cries, Room, for the passion of God, make way there, stand farther off; you stifle her for want of air; it were cruelty, and a thousand pities so sweet a creature should be cast away for want of ease. Come, let us take her into our armes, and put her into this Garden-house which is hard by, in this case we must be content to take that which comes next to hand. All approved what he said; his motion was applauded, and it was concluded that untill her fits were overpast, they should demand leave of those that kept the house to give her entrance, not doubting but she would be much the better if they could be so happy as to get her in the doors; they knockt hard and thick (as men use to do when they are in hast) the good woman that kept the house seeming to suppose it was her master, said talking to her self as she came. O good God! is it you master? I pray Sir be not angry that I came no sooner. This and the like excuses, her unprofitable chops mumbled to her self. This old Hagg knew very well what part she was to act, a dissembling crafty old Baud, one that had her lesson beforehand, and received her instructions from my father. My good old woman had by this time opened the gate, and full of dissimulation, she thus sets upon them: What a stir, what a knock

*A notable  
subtily of  
Guzmans  
moth.r.*

# The Life of Guzman

king is here ! the devil take you all, let me know your minde, for I may not stand idle here. Then the old Knight answered, Good woman, I pray aford some place in your house where this Gentlewoman may rest her self; for a grievous pain in her stomach hath befallen her upon the way. The old Beldam seemed to relent at this relation, and in her rustick manner sorrowfully replied, Now a mischief on all such ill luck, that any pain should prove so unhappy, as to be thus ill employed upon so sweet a face. Come in I pray, in Gods name, for all the house is at your service: she intreated them to conduct the Gentlewoman into the house; she brought them in-

(a) Colchones is a kind of mattress quilted with thrid.

to a low room, in which were certain (a) Colchones or Mattresses; this she presently unfolded, opens a Chest, and takes out a pair of sheets, a fair quilt, and a couple of pillows, wherewith she dressed up a bed. My mother in this her pitiful pain, put off her cloaths, went to bed, and dissembled a desire to sleep.

The poor old Knight, whose chiefest joy consisted in giving her content, was (honest Cuckold) wonderfull glad, leaving her alone in her naked bed; and having made fast the door that none might disturb her repose, he went to recreate himself in those gardens belonging to the house, charging the people to make no noise, injoyning all to silence, and not to open the door without his order. My Father in the mean time was not asleep, but peeping through the key-hole of a close closet, whither he had retired himself, till he could take advantage to sally forth and surprize that desired Fort, which he had so long since subtilly undermined, when all was quiet, and

and that her own Nurse that came with her, and the other old Baud of the house stood like two sentinels upon their watch, ready upon all occasions to give quick advice by a secret sign, when the Knight should make head that way; then did my father issue out of that postern or little back-door of his, that he might see and confer with his Mistress; and at that very instant did her feigned pangs cease, and those truer ones of love began to manifest themselves. In this swelling kind of sport they continued two long houres, two yeers being not sufficient to express those passages that were betwixt these two new lovers in this their merry fit.

Now the day grew very hot, which forced the Knight to make his retreat toward the house; which he did the more willingly, out of the desire he had to visit his sick Saint: upon his approach the sentinels shot off a warning piece; & my father with great sorrow of heart forsook the fort where he had set up his standard; and retired back to his Court of Guard, shutting himself up close where he was before. Upon the entring in of her old Gallant, she seemed to be fast asleep, and was awakened by the noise he made, and with a bended brow and angry look, with coyness of Language, she turned away from him, pitying as it were, and bemoaning her self: Ah me! God help me, Why (alafs) have they opened the door so quickly? I thought you of all others would not have put me out of so sweet a slumber. But 'tis no matter, I shall one day; and with that she sighed and stopped, as if she would proceed; studying more to amaze him than declare her self. The old Knight, this patient

ent piece of flesh, gently made answer: By those eyes of thine, the Stars I adore, I did not think to wake thee: It grieves me, dear heart, I have done thee that wrong; yet hast thou slept full two hours. Two hours? (replied my mother) no nor half an hour, methinks it is but even now that I began to shut my eyes, and in all my life I never had so quiet and contented a slumber for that little while it lasted. Her Knight rejoiced to see her so well recovered; and by consent of both parties they agreed to celebrate their Feast there, for that Garden was no less pleasant than their own. And whilst dinner was preparing, my father found fit opportunity to get out at the other gate, and to return back to *Sevill*, where every hour was a thousand years, a moment an age, and his absence from his new love a present hell. When the Sun was in declining, he mounted upon his Gennet, as if it had been but his ordinary walk; he came to visit this his house, wherein he found these gallants; he bad them welcome, telling them, he was glad to see them there, only he was sorry for the mishap which caused their stay: for so soon as he came, they told him all that had past. My father made them many discreet and fair offers, and there was a great league of friendship professed and confirmed betwixt them in publike, but a stricter tie in secret between my father and his Mistress: the conversation went forward, Cards are called for, the Game *Pri-miera* at three hands; my mother got the money, my father being willing to lose to her. Towards night they left play, and go into the Garden after supper; a Barge is made ready, decked with

with flags and green boughs, and being lanchèd into the chanel, they might hear from other revels which passed upon the River, several Con-  
sorts of curious Musick: being come into the City, they landed and took their leaves, every one going to his own home.

My fathers contemplative parts was so full of fancies, he could not rest; my mother also full of musing and thoughtful Love: she was an *Andaluz*, born in the Town of *Sevill*, and bred in that school where she proved a good proficient, and with great Art performed her Exercise for the degree of a Whore. The good old Knight

*Disposition  
of Guz.  
mother.*

(as formerly you have heard) was an ancient man, and of a feeble body; My mother young and fair, and full of wit, and knew so well how to provoke his appetite upon all occasions, that his disorder opened the door to his death: for the Old Lad by Over-doing himself, hastned his own end; first his stomach began to fail him, then he was taken with a pain in his head, after that followed the burning Feaver, which in a little time put a period to his dayes: he left in the house many kinsmen when he died. Indeed

*Old men  
unfit for  
young wo-  
men,*

the Gentleman had very little comfort in this life, and at the time of his death, they on the one side, and my mother on the other, whilst the breath was yet in his body, pulled the linen from under him; leaving him a soul in his body, but not a sheet in his bed. So that the sacking of *Antwerp* was not so rigorous, not half so inhumane as this. After this, my mother found the way to put her hands there where her heart was long before, and falls to fingering his mony. She had all his goods of worth in her keep-

*cruel actio  
of Guz.  
mother.*

ing

ing under lock and key ; and being in danger, she thought it better to steal than begg; and on both sides they were so nimble, that there was scarce enough left to bury him. Some few days after, great diligence was used to make these goods appear. Excommunications were set up upon the Churches and mens doors, by that means intending to make purloyners bring in the goods; but all to no purpose : for he that steals, seldom returns to make restitution. My good mother made this excuse, saying, That the Knight (God be with him) would tell her when he brought money into the house, or perused his Coffers or Cabinets, This is thine (Sweet-heart) it is all for you : so the Lawyers were of opinion, that with this she might very wel satisfy her conscience. Besides, they affirmed it was due debt; for though, it was not lawful for her to play the whore, yet she might by Law have whatsoever was promised her for the use of her body.

But I return from whence I have digressed. She was dearly beloved by this her second owner; and in this change and alteration of things, I was between three & four years old : she was so well learned in her Art, that by the rules and reckonings of her Feminine knowledge, I had two fathers, both of them did acknowledge me to be their Son ; the one said I was his, so did the other. When the Knight was alone, my mother would tell him that I was as like him, as if I had been spit out of his mouth; when again she talked with my father, she would swear I was his *alter ego*, and that two eggs were not more alike, than he and I. They both

Guzmans  
two fathers  
by virtue  
of his mo-  
ther.

both loved her, and both made exceeding much of me: the difference onely was, that when the Knight lived, he was my true father in publike, and the stranger in secret; and so my mother certified me afterwards, making large relations of these things unto me.

Although his Garden-house which he had purchased, was a place of pleasure and delight, yet it was his undoing and her overthrow, by his feasting and banquetings, which were very frequent. What with Sutes of Law, Presents to my mother, and other disbursements, one charge drawing on another, a great part of my fathers estate was consumed, he was upon the point of breaking, and ready to turn Bankrupt, as he had often done before; so that it was no new or strange thing unto him. My mother was a thrifty wench, no waster, but would be sure to secure her own she had in her more youthful days: in the Knights life-time, and at his death, she had scraped together almost ten thousand Ducats; this was her dowry, and so much he had with her; this money did somewhat refresh his drooping estate, it made him hold up his head again; like oyl to a Lamp, it made him give fresh light. He spent bravely, got him a *Caroche* and a *Silla de Manos*, a little chair to carry with hands, as well for ease as state, not so much for any desire my mother had thereunto, as for his own ostentation and vain-glory, that the world might not take notice of the decay of his estate.

How Guz.  
mother got  
her wealth.

In this fashion did he live to uphold his credit; but his gains did not equal his expences: there was but one to get, & many to spend; the  
times



times were hard, the yeers dear, little or no trading, so that at last all was brought to nothing: the light was now quite out, and my father being taken with a grievous sickness, was arrested by death within five dayes after, and so shut up his shop-windows, and departed this world. Now I being but a child, and of small understanding, I was not sensible of the loss of my father, nor found I any great miss of him when he dyed, though I was at that time a dozen yeers old. The house was well furnished with household-stuff, which we sold by parcels to supply our wants. My mother grieved much for the death of her good husband, and too soon found the decay of her wealth; and albeit her beauty was not disfigured, yet her yeers had somewhat defaced it, so that she was *super-annuated* for any more Suiters.

In this also I was unhappy, since that sweet profit my mother got (as Cats do by their tails) did then cease, when I had most need of it: her name was *Marcella*, which was burnished with the title of *Don* set over the head of it, for as she was called *Donna Marcella*, so had she her *Don* or *Cavallero* for her servant; *Donna* without *Don*, being less comely than a house without a bed, or a body without a shadow. As for her fir-names, my grand-mother did underprop her with the best titular names she could devise, which to repeat were to reckon up a Bead-roll of Genealogies, as long as any Letany sung at Divine Service. My mother told me in secret, that by some likely incounters, and other circumstances concurring together, she knew her self to be a By-blow of a *Cavallero* that was neer related

related to the Dukes of *Medina Sidonia*; But I was an unfortunate man, and stood alone by my self without any tree by me, either to shadow or shelter me. I had many troubles came upon me, my burthen heavy, my strength weak; the best help I had, was to try my fortune, by leaving my mother and my Country, to see if I could mend my miserable estate. I did so; and because I would not be known, I used not my fathers name, but passed by that of *Guzman*, which I took from my mother, and of *Alfarache* which was the place of my inheritance: and with this resolution I went abroad to see the world.

whence  
Guzman  
de Alfa-  
rache had  
his name.

## CHAP. II.

*How Guzman departed from his mothers house, what befell him with his Hostess and a Carrier.*

IT grieved me much that I that had been fed with the finest, never checkt or chid by my father, but adored like a Merchant of *Toledo*, should now forsake *Sevill*, my native soyl, forgo my fathers house, kinsfolks and friends; but a desire to see the world, and more especially my noble kinred and allyance in *Italy*, did quicken and put life into those drowisie limbs, which necessity compelled to travel.

Scarce had I gone out of the City gate, but two rivers brake from mine eyes, and bathed my face with tears; with which, and night coming

Guzman  
departs  
from Se-  
vil, and  
on

what hap-  
ned to him  
the first  
night.

on ( for I set forth late and unluckily ) was the cause I could not discern any light of Heaven, nor perceive so much as a handful of Earth I went on. When I came to *San Lazaro*, ( not farre from the City ) I sate me down upon the steps, by which we go up to that holy Hermitage: There I made a muster of my life, surveyed my condition, was about to go back, because ill provided, worse advised, poorly furnisht for so long a Voyage. I had a great mind to supper, but the devil a bit, save a little fresh water from a Fountain hard by. What to do with my self I knew not. My thoughts began as fast to waver, as my feet did wander: at length, willing to put my self into Gods hands, I entred into a Church, & in the midst of a short prayer was disturbed; for the hour came to rid the Church, and shut the doors. Tears trickled from mine eyes, and sorrow lull'd me asleep upon a seat in the Porch, until the Timbrels, Songs, and Dances of certain Women, which came thither next day to keep their Wake, to feast and be merry, with their dubbing and their bawling, roused me from sleep. Up I got, hungry and drowsie, without knowing for a while where I was; me thought I was still as it were in a dream. But when at last I was fully awake, I said to my self, *Echada esta la suerte*, the Dye is thrown, God send me good luck. With this resolution forward I went, but whither I knew not. My feet carried me along, come good, or come ill, over hill and dale trudg I; and having wearied my self with going but two little Leagues; at length, full of sweat and dust, my feet surbated, my self sad, my teeth sharp, and my stomach taint, to an Inne I came.

I ask'd what we might have to dinner? they told me, that they had nothing but eggs; it had not been amiss if they had been eggs: for either whether the roguish Hostess, through too much heat, clocking over them, or that the Fox had kill'd the Hen, some were grown addle, others ready to hatch; and that she might not lose by them, she had put them in a box, and had mingled them with other eggs that were good. My Hostess, seeing I was a young Lad, ruddy-cheek'd, full-fac'd, and plump withall, that I was a novice in the world, and look'd like a good honest simple Youth, said unto me, My pretty child, Whence art thou? I told her I was of *Sevill*: with that she came nearer unto me, and giving me a chock under the chin, said unto me, Now you little wanton Fool, whither wander you? O good God, how did her stinking breath annoy me! with her very touching of me, me thought I had drawn old age upon me, the attraction was so sensible to my seeming. If my belly had been full as it was empty, all had come up; for my stomach rose up to my mouth, and my guts had almost kist my lips. I told her, that I was going to the Court, and wisht her to give me somewhat to dinner. She made me sit down upon a lame bench, on the top of a little block she spread a Dish-cloth, just for all the world like unto the Maulkin wherewith she swept her Oven; and this (forsooth) was my Tablecloth: my Salt-sellar was the foot of an old broken Pitcher, such as she sets full of water to make her Poultry drink, and half a loaf of bread that was blacker than her Napery. This preparation made, she pour'd me forth upon a

*The rogue-  
ry of an  
Hostess.*

Plate, a Froize of eggs; the bread, the jarr, the water, the salt-seller, the salt, the linen, and the Hostess were all one, so well did they suit together. I took all patiently; my tongue was tyed, my mouth muzled, my stomach empty, my guts shrunk, and clung together: I was as sharp set upon my Froize, as a Hog upon his Acorns, and slopt up my eggs, as a Sow does Wash, all went clean up together, without any great chewing: to speak the truth, I felt the tender bones of those untimely Chickens to crackle between my teeth, that they made my gums to tickle again.

I made light of it, my dinner was short, and as quickly dispatcht, I took in good part this my first courie, though it could not be well coarser. Upon my bread I dwelt somewhat longer; I fell to that a little more leisurely, pausing now and then betwixt every bit; for it being likewise very bad, I was forced to take longer time, one morsel making way for another, that it might the more orderly descend down into my stomach. I began with the crust, and ended in the crum, which was as tough as whit-lether, and as dry as a Pastbord. I left not the least crum for the Ants to feed on.

In conclusion, I did refresh my self with eating, and did chear up my self with drinking; for the Wines of those Countries are exceeding rich, generous, and full of spirit; and with this I had pretty well recovered my self, and received new courage. And so I went on my way; but the eggs that I had eaten began to dance in my mouth, & my stomach began to stir more and more: for considering how ill they were dressed,

of what blackness the oyl, like to that which is in the bottom of a Lamp; a foul Pan, & a foul blear ey'd Hostess, my fancy wrought so with me, that I could hold no longer. For as it is with your Women that are with child, so was it just with me: Eructations and belchings did come and go from my stomach to my mouth, at last I fell a vomiting, til there was not any thing left within me; and even yet to this day, me thinks I hear those little Chickens, those poor pretty fools, cry still peep, peep, within my bowels. In this miserable taking, I sat me down on the side of a Ditch, considering with my self what misfortune I had, and was like to run into, much repenting my self of my unadvised departure.

Troubled in mind, full of care and thoughts, and pensively musing with my self, I lay all along on the ground, leaning mine head upon mine arm; when by chance a Carrier hapt to pass by, who went along with empty Mules, which were to be laden with Wine at the Village called *Casalla de la Sierra*. He seeing me sitting in this melancholy manner, a young Stripling all alone, afflicted in mind, handsom in my person, and reasonably well clad, as one that had been much made of heretofore, began (as I then conceived) to pity my troubles, and to take compassion of me, asking me, What the matter was, that I was so sad? I told him all that had hapned unto me in my Inn; and had scarce made an end of my Tale, when he brake forth into such a Yowl of Laughing, that he was ready to burst, and I to break forth into Cholers: And that face of mine, which before was as pale

as ashes, was set on fire by those coals of anger, which were kindled in my brest against him : But I held my tongue, and said nothing unto him, because I could not crow as I would. For it is discretion to dissemble that, which a man cannot help, patiently brooking this rather grinning than laughing : But although I did forbear him, yet he had so heated me, that out of the warmth of that choler, which yet boyled within me, I could not chuse but tell him, My Friend, Do you see me coated for a Fool, or with a Fools Cap on my head ? what else is it that occasions you thus to laugh ? He rather increasing than ceasing his laughter, and laying both hands as hard as he was able, one while upon his belly, another on his sides, for fear of bursting; he was scarce able to sit upon his Beast for falling, and seemed as if he would at every bout have come tumbling down on the ground.

*The description of  
Laughter.*

I was about to answer him some three or four times, but I could never come to do it ; for I no sooner offered to speak unto him, but he presently fell a-fresh to his laughing, til he chuck't again. At last, this inundation began to fall by little and little, by patches, and by pieces, now a word and then a word, as well as he could, having taken a little breath, delivering his mind by halves, like one that stumbles and goes, and goes and stumbles, he blundered forth these words, My good Youth, I do not laugh at your ill success, nor do your mis-fortunes glad me : but I laugh at that which hapned to this woman scarce two hours since. Did you haply meet with two young Fellows, that were *Comrades*, and waikt along together, and seemed by their habit

habit to be Souldiers; the one clad in a medley green suit, the other in gray or ash-colour'd cloth, with a white doublet cut to the skin? These two (quoth I) if my memorie do not fail me, when I left the Inn, remained there behind, being newly come in when I went my way, and called for their dinner. These then (said the Carrier) are those that have reveng'd your quarrel. And the jest that they have put upon the Hostess, is that which I now laugh at. But if you go my way, get up upon one of these Beasts, and as we ride along I will tel you how it was. I thank'd him for his kindness, as I had good cause so to do, considering my present necessity, rendring him such good language, as I thought might make sufficient payment for such a curtesie; for good words requite good works, when a man is not able to pay him, that he is behold-  
ing unto, in better money; and that he is in necessity, to whom the kindness is done.

Kind words  
current  
money in  
case of ne-  
cessity.

Mounting my self then upon this ill accoutred Gennet, howbeit it was no better than a plain As with a pack-saddle, yet it seemed to me a *Silla de manos*, or easie hand-Chair, a Litter or a Coach, drawn with four horses. But so great was the laughter of this honest man, and so excessive beyond all measure, that he could scarce go on with his Tale. Never any woman that hath been with Child, did ever more earnestly long for any thing, than I did to know the success of this businesse. At last this Mountain brought forth its Mouse: in conclusion he told us, (but with a thousand stops and jumps, and his wonted bounds & curvets of laughing) that he having staid to drink a little wine, and to par-



A jest put  
upon an  
Hostess by  
two young  
fellows.

ry the coming of a Companion of his whom he had left behind, he perceived, that the Hostess of the house brought in on a Plate, a Froize of six eggs; three of them stark naught, the other not so bad, which she set before them : and going about to divide this their Froize or Tansie in twain, it seemed unto them, that it made a certain kind of resistance, refusing ( as it were ) to be parted, one piece hanging (like torn raggs) at the tail of another. Whereupon they began to search a little more narrowly, and they were not long in discovering the truth, for they found to their seeming, three little round bumps, like three little Chickens heads clotted together : And taking one of them between their fingers, it put forth his bill, and began (though dead) to peep forth its head. So they covered the Plate, and one of them called out, Hostess, Have you any thing else for us ? She had a little before ( in their sight ) bought a *Sabalo*, which is a Fish like a *Shad* ) telling them, I have such a Fish here, whereof ( if you will ) I shall spare you a slice or two, other meat have I none. I pray (Mother) said they, broil it us quickly then, and if it stand with your good liking, set a price what you will have for it all. She said, it being cut out into pieces, every slice will yield me a Royal, and I cannot bate you a farthing of it.

At last they agreed for two Royals ; she cuts it out into pieces, broils two of them, they eat it, the rest they wrapt up in a Napkin of her own ; and after they had fill'd their bellies, being not well contented with their ill usage, instead of paying their Reckoning, they reckoned with-  
out

out paying. For one of the young fellows, taking the Froize of eggs in his right hand, went directly thither where the old woman was, unpanching the belly of an old rotten Sheep, that had dyed in some ditch, to make thereof Tripes and Chitterlings, and with all the force that he had, threw it full in the face of her; seeling up both her eyes therewith, which looked like an old wall all to be dawbed with rough-cast. Which playstred eyes of hers he had made so blind, and painful unto her, that not daring to open them, she cried out as if she had been mad. whilst this his other Companion, behaving himself as if he had rebuked him for it, and that he might be ashamed to use a poor old woman in this uncivil kind of fashion, threw me a handful of hot ashes in the very face of her, and so they got them out of doors, telling her as they went away, Ah you old rotten Carrion, *Qui en tal haze, que tal pague*, you are now paid in your own money: what you got by your cozening, you may now put it in your eye.

She was toothlesse, chap-faln, hollow-eyd, & wappering withall, her hair sluttishly hanging about her ears, unkempt, and as greazie, as it was knotty; a fouler Swine no man ever saw: mealed she was all over, like a Mullet dressed with flower, or a Flounder that is ready for the Frying-pan; with a gesture so graciously scurvie, a look so pleasantly fierce, and in all the rest so handsomly ill-favoured, that as oft as you shall but think either of it or her, you cannot (if your life should lie upon it) but you must needs burst forth into Laughter.

With this he ended his storie, telling me,

that he had now matter enough to laugh at all the dayes of his life. Whereunto I answered, And I to weep. Why, quoth he? Because when time was, I did not doe the like. To *Cantillana* we came about Sun-set,

---

C H A P. III.

*How Guzman and the Carrier did eat of a young Mule, thinking it had been Veal, being cozened by his Host in Cantillana.*

I Ask'd my Camerade, Whither shall we goe now? He told me, Here's an honest Host hard by, one of my old acquaintance, a good-fellow, where we shall be well lodged, fare daintily, and kindly entertained. Well, along we trudge together, till we came to this his so much commended Inne, having brought me (as you shall hear hereafter) to one of the veriest thieves, and arrantest knaves, that there was not such another in all that part of the Country wherein he liv'd.

Our Host had for his own use a good strong Ass, and a *Galitian* Mare, that was a pretty little Tit. They were alwayes fellow-feeders in one Stable, one Rack, and one Field; whereby it came to pass that this Mare grew great with Foal. It is an inviolable Law in *Andaluzia*, That no such Conjunction, or Commixture be permitted; and so this end, grievous penalties are ordained. This Mare then, having in her due time foaled a pretty young Mule, mine Host

*A Law in Andalusia against the unnatural covering in horses.*

was

was willing to make profit thereof, and resolved to kill him. He cuts me out the flesh of it into pieces, which he powders up in a pickle made of purpose, and made ready against the next day (being Saturday) for his Guests, all the entrals and offals of this beast. My Companion, as soon as he had alighted and taken off his lading, and put up all things safe, set up his Asses in the stable, taking order for their dressing and their feeding. But I came thither so wearied, that I was not able when I lighted to stand upon my leggs, but was faine to lie down on the ground, and was not able for a great while to turn my self any way in the world; all my muscles and sinews were quite benumm'd, my leggs and sweet swoln, with their long hanging down for want of Stirrops my breech extremely gall'd, my parts neerer my privities full of pain, as if so many needles had been stuck in my Groyn; my body was all out of joynt; but of all other parts, my belly (for pure hunger) did most piteously complain.

*These things are commonly eaten in Spain upon Saturdays, by a custom received amongst them.*

We ask'd our Host, if he had any thing in the house for our Supper? He answered, He had; adding withall, that we should fare very daintily. He was a burly kind of man, yet of a stirring metal, nimble-witted, cheeriul both in his speech and countenance, an eternal talker, but above all a most excellent Villain. His promising person (I confess) did deceive me: for, seeing so good a presence, & not having known him before, the Spot at first sight made shew of a good Card. And hearing him say that he could feast us bravely, my very heart and soul did leap for joy within me: Oh, they were com-

*what manner of creature our Host was.*

for-

fortable words ! Whereupon I began with my self to give thanks unto God, for that after our troubles, he gives us ease; after sickness, health; after a storm, a calm; after sorrow, joy; and a good supper after a bad dinner. Its very well, (said my Companion) to mine Host : Now and thou beest a good fellow, tel me I pray thee, what dainty morsel hast thou provided for us? This dissembling Rascal told him, Yesterday I kild a delicate fine young Calf, which was eight days old, the offals and the intrails are ready drest, take what you please. With this, my heart began to be somewhat lighter than it was before, and I said unto him, Mine Host, bring us what you think good.

Thereupon, the Cloth was laid in the turning of an hand, our Linen was clean, and our bread was not so bad as before, but our wine was passing good : we had also a fresh Sallad set upon the Board in a fair Plate. After he had set down the Sallad, he brings us in two little Plates, in each of which lay a little of this same Calves-pluck, I say, a little; for he was afraid to give us too much, lest through too much plenty, hunger being satisfied, and the belly glutted, we might more easily come to the knowledge of this deceit of his.

Leading us thus leisurely along, we follow the sent we first ran upon, and it seemed to our taste, that we still did eat, according to that conceit which we had entertained of this our supposed tender Veal; and the more we thought thereon, the greater edge was set upon our appetite; and as as we had a longing desire thereunto, so by degrees we were still calling for the  
same

same hand again. For my Companion, there was no care to be taken for him, all meats were alike to him; for he was born amongst Savage people, and bred up by brutish Parents, whose palate was seasoned from the cradle with a clove of Garlick, and your rude rustical Clowns, in matter of taste can seldom distinguish ill from good. This cunning Rogue, mine Host, gave it us by way of distillation, Limbeck-fashion, now a little, and then a little: all seemed to me to be Suckers, and Marmalade; and me-thought I should never have enough to fill my belly. I demanded, if he had any thing else: He told me, we might (if we would) have the brains fried, with some butter and eggs. We told him we would. In the mean while he gave us, to entertain the time withall, a piece of flesh folded, and rolled up, made out of the Tripes, (after the fashion of your roasted Olives of Veal) together with some of the Film and rind of the belly. I did not like the taste of it half well; it smelled (me thought) like rotten straw that's thrown out upon the dunghil. Whereupon I thrust it from me, leaving it to my Companion, who entred roundly upon it, devouring it as greedily as a man would grapes, comming into a Vineyard in the time of Vintage. The eggs and the brains were set upon the Board; and when my honest Carrier saw this fine Froyze, he began, according to his old wont, to laugh out aloud, with as wide a throat as you can imagine. I did fret and fume, and chafe with my self out of all cry, conceiting, that he made himself merry with my misery. Our Host thereupon looking very soberly on us both, with a

*Agaily  
conscience  
is ever-  
more suspi-  
cious, and  
full of fear.*

watch-

watchfull eye observing our behaviour, and with an itching ear, listning to hear what we said; seeing his discomposed laughter so ill seasoned, and un-occasioned (as he thought) was much moved thereat; fearing that he had found out his Knavery; for until then, there was not any matter offered, that might move occasion of laughter. And therefore he was jealous, that the Fox was now un-earthed, and this must needs be it. And because a guilty person is afraid of his own shadow, his own Conscience accusing him, the committed fault representing the deserved punishment.

This poor Rogue (albeit a very villain) hardened in roguery, and habituated in mischief, and all kind of coozenages, was now out of heart, and grew silly and weak spirited, and was ready to quake for fear. Besides, such kind of men are commonly Cowards, and have only an outside of men, but no manhood at all. Why is it (think you) that some men hack and hew, and threaten to kill and slay, and like Tygers lay about them? I will tell you the reason of it. They doe this, not out of true metall, but to make others afraid, and to supply by this roaring carriage, the defect of their courage, being like herein, to dogs; whereof those that are barkers are least biters. Our Host was (as I told you) much troubled; began to swear with many great and horrible oaths, that it was very good Veal, and that we had no just cause nor reason to laugh as we did. These words he uttered with much passion; with a face as red as fire. The Carrier lifting up his head, and looking earnestly upon him, told him; who med-

meddles with you (my friend) what wrong have we done you, that you are so cholerick? We do not touch upon you, no not so much as to ask you how you do, or how old you are? Have you any Edict, or Proclamation here in the house, that doth set a Tax or rate upon laughing? or to what proportion and quantity your guest shall be tyed to laugh? I tell you, Sir, you are mistaken in me; for I am of that free disposition, that if I were minded to laugh at any thing of yours, I am not so meal-mouthered, but I would plainly tell you at what I laugh.

These egges put me in mind of those other, which my Companion here did eat to day at an Inne some three leagues hence. Then he up and told all that had passed, as my self before had delivered unto him; and that which happened afterwards in his presence, betwixt the old Hostesse, and my two young Souldiers; in the relating whereof, he seemed as if he had been bathing himself all the while in Rose water, if a man might judge the content he took in repeating the same, by his passions, his loud laughers, strange vilages, antick gestures, and the diversities of postures, in the bowing and writhing of his body, all the while that he was telling him his tale. Mine Host, he fell as fast a blessing and crossing himself, pouring out Volleys of exclamations, calling upon, and often reiterating the name of Jesus a thousand times one after another, and lifting up his eyes to heaven, said; Our blessed Lady be my helper; let her still be present with me! *Mal haya Dios, a quien mal haze su Officio*, let ill betide him  
 tl at



that performs his function ill. And because in his Thieveries and his Rogueries he was so good a Proficient, he might rest assured, that this malediction did not belong to him, so well had he exercised that trade all his life time. He began afterwards to walk up and down, and seeming sometimes to wonder, sometimes to complain, at last he cryed out; I wonder a Gods name, that the earth did not open, and swallow up this Inn? How is it possible, that God should dissemble his anger, and forbear to punish so vile a woman? Does this old witch live? is she not gone down quick to hell? All complain of her; no man comes away contented from her.

*Mine Host  
by railing  
on the old  
Hostesse  
discovers  
the knave-  
ry of Inne-  
keepers.*

For these and other the like tricks, no Passenger will stay to bait at her Inne, they have all set a Crosse upon her door, they blesse themselves when they goe by, and make large strides till they be past that wicked house. I swear unto you she would be well whipt, if she were well serv'd, that all other coozening queans, such as she is, might take example by her. Her Sign was once pull'd down, and order taken, that she should not keep victualling any more. There is something in it that makes her to do as she does. There must be some mystery in it, what ever it be: for she robs and coozens with the like liberty to day, as she did yesterday; and now, as last year. And (which is worst of all) she cozens with that confidence, as if she were commanded so to do. And sure it must needs be so; for the Guards, the Searchers, the Promoters, and the Alguazils, all see her dealings, and know them well enough; yet they wink at them,

them, and say not so much as black is her eye. These I warrant you be her fee'd men, she gives them good content, and greazes them in the fist with that, which she filches from others. For if it were not so, as sure as the Coat is on your back, they would have a fling at her, and pay her home again with a Pox in her own kind.

Howbeit (wretched woman as she is) it is punishment enough unto her, that she lived so long, as to discredit her house. For if she had kept good meat in her house, and us'd her Guests well, behaving her self civilly, and demanding reasonable reckonings, her custome would have been good, and all Travellers would have flockt unto her house. And you know, *De muchos pocos hizoera mucho*; Many a little makes a mickle. But shame light upon her, and all such as she is. The Devil take such conscionable Inne-keepers. Blessed be that unspotted purity of the Virgin *Mary*, that though I am but a poor man, yet I thank God for it, there is no such ill usage in my house, no such deceitfull tricks; Every thing here is sold for the thing it is; no Cats, for Conies; not Mutton, for Veal. *Limpieza de vida, es lo que importé*; a clear Conscience, is that, which will carry a man through thick and thin. Let every man enjoy that which is his own.

Here he stopt, and cuts off the thred of his Discourte, giving us in stead of our second course, two or three Olives, as big as Nuts. We intreated him that against the next morning we might have a morsel of his Veal made ready for us. He undertook that care, and we went to take our rest. Our boulders were our pack-saddles;

dies; and our bedding the cloaths that covered our Packs, which we stretcht out as plain as we could upon the bare Floor; and so we past over that night as well as we could.

I was monstrously flea-bitten by that infinite number of Fleas which had fed that night on my Carkasse, in the morning I got me up, looking for all the world, like one that had been sick of the small Pox, or infected with the Meazles, my face and hands, and all my whole body over, not having one free place, or one spot of white, no not so much as you might put a pins point between; so miserably was I tormented with them. But fortune was herein so favourable unto me, that what with the wearinesse of the journey, and taking a cup or two over night more than ordinary, I slept soundly, dreaming heavenly dreams, no noise hindring my quiet rest, till that my Companion did awaken. We rise by the break of day. And calling presently for our breakfast, it was brought us in; but it did not like me so well as it did my fellow; for every morsel that went down his throat, seemed to him, as if he had swallowed so many bits of the brawn of some young tender Peacocks, and he did so much commend the goodnesse of it, as if all the world could not afford a dantier dish. To me it seemed tough and unsavoury, and of that little which I did eat over night at supper, my stomach was so surcharged, I was not able for my life to digest it. And I said unto mine Host, How comes this flesh to be so tough, and of that evil rellish, that a man can scarce fasten upon it with his teeth? He told me; Do not you see, Sir, that it is flesh  
that

that hath been newly kild, and wants time for the mortifying and making of it tender? Here-upon my Companion taking his Q: It is not (quoth he) any lack of mortifying, or hanging in the air; or that it does not eat tender and short enough, that makes this Gentleman to be so squeamish: but because he hath been fed from his cradle with Spice-buns, Sugar-cakes, and fresh eggs, all other meats save these, are hard both to his teeth and stomach. I shrunk up my shoulders, and held my peace; for all this, I could not herewith rest contented, but still methought this meat had an ill smatch with it; but passing it over, I call'd for a reckoning. My Companion told me, I should let my purse alone; for he would pay for us both. I was very thankful to him in my heart for this his kindness, and for his freeness and love in giving me my horse-hire and my dyet *gratis*.

I thought with my self, this world would still hold, and that wheresoever I went, I should meet with some one or other that would bear my charges, and let me ride for nothing. I had now taken heart unto me, and began to be pretty well fresh. And because it should not be said of me. *Que de los ingratos est avelleno el infierno*; That hell is full of ungrateful persons: While he was paying the shot, I was willing to shew some part of my thankfulness, by leading out his Asses to drink, and carrying them back again to their cratches, to the end, that while they were saddling and making all things ready, they might champ upon their straw, and make an end of their provender. I put a helping hand to all that was needful, rubbing their foreheads and their

C

ears,

ears, as well as I was able.

Whilst I was busied in this, I had laid my Cloak upon a bench hard by, which like Quick-silver before the fire, or smoke before the wind, was vanisht away in an instant, that I never could set eye on it more; nor could devise in the world what should become of it. I thought with my self, that either mine Host, or my Confort, had, to make themselves merry therewith, hid it from me in jest. But it was now no more a jesting matter, for they began to swear in good earnest that they had it not, nor knew what was become of it; I made diligent search for it even to the very Gate which was shut, and had not yet been opened. There was no body there in the house but our selves, and mine Host, and therefore me thought it was impossible that it should be lost, and that I might peradventure forget my self, and have put it apart in some other place. Hereupon I sought up and down all the House; and going out of the Hall into the Kitchin, it was my hap to come into a back Court, where I found a great plash of fresh bloud, and hard by it a Mules skin, fairly stretcht out to its full bredth and length, from the which the feet were not yet cut off; The ears were there at large, and all that part of the head towards the forehead neer whereunto were those other bones belonging to the head, only the tongue and the brains were wanting: which I no sooner perceived, but I was presently confirmed in my doubt.

Hereupon I straight goe forth to call in my Comp-nion; To whom, when I had made show of the Hide, that had bound in our Breakfast and

our

our Supper, I then said unto him; What think you now Sir? Are not those things (trow you) Sugar-cakes, and new-laid Eggs, in comparison of these that we eat at home? This is that Veal forsooth, which you so extolled to the skies; and this is the Host you promised, should provide us such dainty cheer.

What think you of the Supper now, and the Breakfast which he hath bestow'd upon us? Hath he not dealt well with us, I pray? Have we not been excellently well used? He (good man) is none of these cozening Hosts, and cheating Inn-keepers, that will sell a Cat for a Cony; and put away Mutton for Veal. This is that innocent man, that may go unmask'd throughout the world, and cares not who sees him, and looks him in the face, he is so honest a man. This is that *integer vita, scelerisq; purum*, so unspotted in his life and conscience, and so free from all ill dealing, that out of his own integrity, made no bones to curse our Hostess, and the evil usage of her Guests.

He was stricken so dump, and so full of wonder, to see what I had show'd him, that he had not a word to say; but with his head cast down into his bosom, went slinking away from me, and was so amazed at this strange sight, that all the day after til we parted company, I could not get from him so much as a word, save what past at our parting, when we were to take our leave each of other, as you shal hear anon. Howbeit, I was not very well pleased with this unhappy accident; yet notwithstanding (that this his flood of Laughter might by this means be dammed up, or the current thereof turn'd another

ther way, wherewith every moment before, my very heart and soul was overflown, and in manner, quite drowned.) I was wonderfully overjoyed with this my mis-fortune, which did so much the less grieve me, because he had so great a share in it.

What with this (which was vantage enough) and the strong belief that I had, that no man but mine Host could possibly convey away my Cloak, I began somewhat more boldly to charge him with it, put it home to him, and told him plainly that he should answer me my Cloak, and that he had stoln it : But he very scornfully denies, jeering and fleering at me; and the more earnest I was, the more merry he makes himself. Wherewith my patience was so much moved, that I could not hold, but threatned him in my choler with the Justice. But he, for that I was a young Lad, a poor Boy, and no body to take my part, began to domineer over me, telling me, that he had a rod for me in his pocket, and other the like reproachful words, terms only befitting Cowards, and men of base condition, such as himself. But because worms will turn again, if they be trod on, upon multiplying of words one begetting another, at last we fell foul. And as the fewness of my years, and weakness of my strength would give me leave, I tore out half a brick-bat from the side of a bench thereby, and threw it at him as hard as ever I could drive; which if I had hit him withall, and that he had not hid himself behind a pillar, I think I had beaten out his brains, and been fully revenged of the wrong he did me. But he scap'd my hands, and ran as fast as his legs

legs would carry him into his Chamber; whence he came forth in all haste with his sword drawn in his hand. In this manner he makes towards me with his naked sword; whilst I fearing what might follow, stood upon my guard with two pibble-stones, which I had pluckt out of the pavement. Which when he saw I had now ready in my hand, his courage began to be abated, and did not dare to draw neerer unto him.

Now with the noise and out-cries that were made upon this occasion, the whole Inn was in an uproar; and all the neighbours thereabouts hearing the stir, came flocking in upon us, to see what the matter was. All the whole street hastened thither, and with them a great throng of people, as well Justices, as Notaries. There came in two *Alcaldes*, both at the same instant, and each of them strove to have the hearing of the cause, labouring to prevent each other. And the Notaries for their private gain, every one said that this business did belong unto him; whereupon they grew at difference and oddes between themselves.

Upon this contention grew a second quarrel, no less fierce and tumultuous than was ours: for on both sides, they digg'd up their Grand-fathers graves, twitting one another in the teeth with their fathers and their mothers, not sparing one anothers wives, ripping up their faults, and the course of life that they led; wherein perhaps they did not lie: but they would no more understand one another, than did we. Whilst we were in this hurly-burly, came in certain *Regidores*, accompanied with other worshipful



Burgomasters of the Town, who laboured to make peace between them, and laid hold on me. They would needs know what this stir was, and whence it grew. They call'd me aside, and took my confession: I plainly told them all that had passed; but because some that were there by, might chance to over-hear me, I went apart with the *Alcaldes*, and told them in secret what I knew concerning the *Machuelo* or little young Mule. They were first of all desirous to approve and verifie the cause; they used diligence for the apprehending of mine Host, who was carelesse of any ill that might come unto him for that offence. And perswading himself, that all this enquiry was only about the Cloak, made but a jest of it, and laugh'd at it as a thing of nothing, and could no way touch him, for default of information, and those due proofs that I was to make, having no man, besides the Carrier, to witnesse for me, that I was seen to come in thither with a Cloak.

But afterwards perceiving, that by little and little, this peece of hangings came to be seen, to wit the Skin, and the rest of the appurtenances, the Copy of my Gentlemans countenance was quickly altered, and began suddenly to look blank upon the matter; so that when they began to examine him, and had withall before his face shew'd him the skin; confessing the fact, he was convicted, not having the heart to deny any thing, but told them the truth of all that had past; and without having the torment given him, or before ever that he was threatned with the Rack, undemanded he declared the Thefts and Rogueries that he had done, as well in that  
his

his Inne, as his robbing upon the high-way, when he was a Shepheard; whereby he got him a Stock, to set up for himself in this world. I all this while listned very close; looking still when his confession should bring my cloak to light, but out of the malice and hatred he bare unto me, that was quite left out. I used my best diligence I could, to make it appear, but all would not serve the turn. After they had made an end of taking our Declarations; I mean the Carriers and mine, because we were strangers, they did in that particular ratifie and approve what we had deposed. And whilest this Plea was depending, whether or no, (till it were determined) they should carry me to prison, and keep me there, there were divers disputes thereupon; but one of the *Alcaldes* stood up and said, that I had reason on my side, and was in no fault at all, and that they had no reason to question me any farther; for it was punishment enough already for me, and too much too, that I was left thus naked in my Hose and Dubblet, and was cozened of my Cloak. Hereupon they let me goe, but mine Host, he was led away to prison. And leaving him there, we prepare for our journey; and all things being made ready, we begin to set forward; we went away without hearing Masse. I for my part never mist Masse before, being accustomed all my life-time to that dayly exercise of Devotion. From that time forward it entred into my head, that from so bad a beginning, it was impossible to look for a good ending. And that now nothing could succeed well and happily unto me. Nor can it be otherwise expected, when we

serve our selves, and not God first; and not begin with him, before we begin our businessse.

#### CHAP. IV.

*How Guzman being thought to be a Thief, was apprehended; but afterwards being known what he was, was set at liberty.*

YESTERDAY morning I did complain of little weariness, & of the demi-chickens that I had to dinner. Afterwards, I came to make my supper upon the stinking panch of a young Mule; and which was worse, to feed upon the flesh and brains thereof, which was all one in a manner, as if I should have devoured mine own Flesh. I mean by his (a) fathers side, which may be every mans case as well as mine. And for an upshot of all, the ill luck that I had at last, to be cozened of my Cloak. For from the time that I first put forth of doors, all things have gone amisse with me, one mischance being the fore-runner of another, and the sad presager of worser things to come, which like a double *Tertian* went increasing upon me, every fit being worle and more violent than the former.

When I came out of the Inne without my Cloak, and was not only cozened, but made a common laughing stock to as many as look'd upon me! O how I did long to be at home again! But (as the saying is) *el bien, haſt que ſe pierde, no ſe conoce*. Man knows not what happineſſe is, till he wants it.

We were sad and heavy, and jogged on along  
in

(a) The  
Side of a  
Mule is  
an Aſſe.

## de Alfarache,

in a sullen and melancholy kind of fashion; and now my honest Carrier was no more so full of his laughing, as he was before; the wind was laid in that corner, by the trick that my host had put upon him. Before, he threw stones on my howse top, thinking to break the Tyles, and crack my Roof; but when he found his own to be made of glasse, he left his flinging, with-drew his hand, kept his self quiet, and was now as silent as the night. I was thinking of any own misfortunes: and even in the thickest of our contemplations, two Ministers of justice, with their Officers at their heels, came in pursute of a Page, that had stohn from his Master great store of money and jewels. And by the marks that were given them, it should seem it was such another stripling as my self. They had no sooner spied me, but they cryed out aloud: Ah thou thief, have we caught thee? we have thee safe enough now, thou canst not escape our hands: And presently hereupon they struck me off the Ass (my brother) with their fists; and when they had me down, laying fast hold on me, they fell a searching me, thinking to have found the stohn goods about me.

Guzman  
apprehended for a  
Thief,  
and his  
sufferings.

They took off the Pack-saddles, searched the Punnels, leaving not so much room, as you may put a pins head between, which they did not narrowly pry unto: and when they had found nothing there, they begun to exclaime, and cry upon me, Ah thou thief, confesse and tell us the truth; for we will hang thee here presently, if thou delay us any longer. They would not hear me, nor admit of any excuse I could make for my self; and in despite of the world, without any

Sergeants  
and Catch-  
poles are  
a new  
kind of  
people.

any other cause given. ( save their own self will and opinion ) I, and no other man, must needs be the fellow. They gave me many blowes, thumps on the breast, boxes on the ear with the backs of their hands, and many other outrages, wherewith they tormented me, and all, that I might not be suffered by them to speak for my self, and to pronounce something in mine own defence. And although it did much grieve me, to see how ill I was used by them, yet I could not chuse but laugh to my self, for that my Companion was worse dealt withall; laying more load, and harder blowes upon him than me, as a receiver and concealer of this theft, and that he was my partner and sharer therein. I was not half Cater-cousins with him, because by his means, I had lost my Cloak, and supp'd upon a Mule; And therefore I did bear mine own hurt the better, because he suffered somewhat more than my self. They did beat him without Mercy, and had no pity of him in the world, but were still bawling upon him, that he should discover whither he had carryed those goods, and to what secret place he had convey'd them. The poor man, that was as innocent as my self, did not know in the world what to do; He thought at first that they had been but in jest with him, but when he saw they were in earnest, and past so far beyond the bounds of sport, and that it was now no longer a jesting matter,\* He curst the dead to the Devil. This sport did nothing please him, and wisht by this time with all his heart, that he had never seen me. The Gown ( as they say ) was now brusht clean, not a speck to be seen; all was unfolded and searched

\* A Pro-  
ve b

ched over and over; but nothing at all to be found; and though the theft appeared not, yet the rigour of their punishment ceased not; But as if they had the Law in their own hands, or had been to sit upon us as our lawfull Iudges, they did use us most cruelly both in word and deed: Now they being weary with punishing us, and we with suffering it, they began to bind our hands, and pinion our arms, to carry us back with them to *Sevill*.

We were drawn along like dogs in a pair of couples; one amongst the rest lookt stedfastly upon me, and said to some that were by him; How now, what's this? I fear me we have taken our mark amisse, and through our too much hast, have run into an error. The other answered; why think you so? He replied; Doe not you know, that he, whom we are to seek after wants his left Thumb; and this Youth you see, is found in that part? Whereupon they went to read their (a) *Requisitoria*, which did set down the marks whereby they should know him, and they found they had been deceived almost in every one of them. Presently thereupon, they unpinion'd us, and loosed our hands, and craving pardon, that they were so much mistaken, they went their way, taking some few *Quarto's* of the Carrier, for the sight of the Commission, to moysten their mouths at the next *Inne* that they should light on.

*Non ay mal tan malo, de que no resulte algo bueno.*

There is no ill so bad, from whence there doth not rise some good.

If they had not stoln my Cloak from me, by having

(a) *Requisitoria* is a Judges warrant to another, wherein he requireth him to execute his command.

(b) *The Spanish word Quarto,* is a kind of brasse coin, whereof four make three pence

Guzmans  
good fir-  
tune what  
it was.

having that upon my back, they would not have perceived; whether I had been sound of my thumbs, or no. In every thing I had very good fortune, My Money spent, my Cloak stoln, my belly hungry, my cheeks buffeted, my neck out of joynt, and my teeth bathed in blood, with the bobs of my Nose, and the dafhes that they gave me on the mouth. My Companion, if he were not worse, was no lesse ill intreated than my self; And to make us amends, they cry us mercy, saying; That we are not the men. I pray mark what a pretty kind of pardon this was, and in what good time it came; first they fall a beating of us, before they examine us, and to make us amends, forsooth, they ask forgiveness.

Each got upon his Ass, and on we goe till we came within sight of *Caçalla*. My honest Carrier who remained mute, began now to find a Tongue, and was the first that opened his mouth. Alight, quoth he, for here I must leave you; my way lies along by this path. Come hither (my young Gallant) saith he, let us make up our reckoning before we part.

When I heard this, I was almost ready to hang my self, it was the bitterest draught that ere went down my throat. Is it e'en so? (said I to my self) Well, let it go; for I did verily beleeve, that all that past between us, had been in the way of friendship. Well, I dismounted, and got not up so lightly before, as I now came down heavily; for I knew not in the world what answer to make him, save only to ask him, how much I was to pay him for the riding of nine Leagues? He demands three Royals, and  
for

for your lodging and your diet, you are to pay three Royals more. The Vmbles of the Mule I now found to be dear meat unto me ( and that they stuck a little also in his stomach: ) but that which griev'd me most, was, That I had not money to pay for it. And therefore I came unto him, and told him, My friend, Loe, here is your money for the reckoning, so much you say is my part of the shot; but for my horse-hire I owe you nothing; for you your self, without any intreaty of mine, desired me to get up, inviting me thereunto of your own accord.

What a Devil (quoth he) mean you by this? Marry g'up with a murrain, you are a fine Gentleman indeed; doe you think to ride a cock-horse on free cost? you are a pretty Youth indeed. I replyd unto him; we fall to scuffling; at last I agreed to pay for the meat of my Beast for that night, and did so; making an even reckoning with my Purse, having no more left me in all the world, but twenty *Marevedis*, to bear my charges that night. The Muliter went about his businesse. I entred into *Casalla*.





# THE ROGUE:

OR,

The first part of the Life of  
GUZMAN de ALFARACHE,

---

The Second B O O K:

---

## CHAP. I.

*Wherein is treated, how he came to be a  
Rogue; and by being so, what happened  
unto him.*



Being in *Caçalla*, twelve Leagues  
from *Sevill*, with my purse  
penniless, my patience reme-  
diless, and accused (as you  
have heard) for a Thief, by  
way as it were of Prophecie,  
presaging what I should be hereafter. I suffered  
enough the first day I set forth; the second,  
more: For my care increased; one mischief o-  
vertaking another. The third day was to me,

as it were, a day of death: for then I had my full load of miseries. I found myself then like a lean Dogg, barked at by others; grinning with my teeth upon all those that came round about me; turning head against all, but not daring to bite any; but that which most troubled me, was, That I had not wherewithall to defray my necessary expences. This was the first time that I look'd that Heretick *Necessity* in the face. Oh how many dishonest actions doth it venture on! what cruel imaginations doth it represent? what infamous things doth it solicit? what discords doth it drive into? and what impossibilities doth it not attempt? She is Mistresse of all things, a subtil Inventresse, by whom your Thrushes, your Pyes, your Jack-dawes and your Parrats are taught to speak. I plainly began to perceive, how Adversity makes men wise. Til this present I was a meer Cockney. I had many chips to be hewn out of me, and the first stroke of the Ax, was this trouble that did light upon me; which did so wound the main timber, and so touch me to the quick, that I know not how to indeer it unto thee. I saw my self abandoned, I knew not where to find harbour, or to put into any port for to save my self. My yeers were few, my experience lesse; to ask counsel, I did not know from whom. I entred into a reckoning with my self, and was making my Account, which I found to be bad; my charge was great, my cash small: to go on I wanted means, as I likewise did for to carry me home. I was ashamed, being I was come away from thence, to return.

*The effects  
of want.*

*Necessity  
the best  
School-  
mistress.*

I tell you, it would have grieved me very  
much

much to have returned home without a cloak; especially having come forth with one upon my back. Nor was I willing to be laught at, (which they could not choose but do) to see what a single-sole Gentleman I was, and how like a naked cottage I look'd, or a bare wall without hangings: Besides, I made it a point of shame, and stood much upon it. And that having put on a resolution at my departing, it had been pusillanimity in me, and baseness of mind, to have had but so much as a bare thought of returning back again. I said with my self, my Reputation lies upon't; my honour is engaged, I must and will go on, my trust is in God, and I hope he will not fail me. Having thus set up my rest, I resolved to pass forward, with purpose to make a journey to *Madrid*; For there was the Court, where was all the bravery and gallantry of the world.

I thought, because I was a handsome young Lad, well shap'd, and of some reasonable good fashion in my behaviour, that they would have gone together by the ears for me, striving who should have me away with him. I plotted many things, but none of my projects did hit right: Now having gotten me a short Cane in my hand, instead of a walking Cudgel, as I was trudging along, a couple chanced to overtake me travelling that way on their Mules: I thought with my self, Could I now hold out lustily, and keep company with them, they could not in kindness but pay my charges. They had never a boy between them, to go along and look to their Mules. I jogg'd still along, and kept close with them, and when we had gone some three Leagues,

Leagues, or thereabouts, it was neer about Noon. My heart-strings were ready to break with trotting and gallopping after them, because I would not be cast behind. For, though their gate were easie, yet it put me to the height of my speed. But these miserable wretches would not exchange so much as one word with me, because they would not help me (if need had been) with some entertainment on the way. We came in together into the Inne where we were to bait; but I in that case, that there was but little difference betwixt me, and one that is dead, I was e'en quite out of heart, and clean tired out: But that I might get me a morsel of bread to put in my mouth, I was forc'd to buckle up my self, to bestir my stumps, to lay aside all ceremonies, and to forget to stand upon my points. Moreover, I applyed my self to wait upon them, to put their Mules into the Stable, and to carry their luggage into their lodging; but at the first dash one of them sayes unto me, Stand aside (my young Gallant) get you gon, we have no need of your service.

There came thither at that time a *Franciscan* Fryer, who was on foot, and all in a sweat. He sate down to rest himself, and anon after, puls me out of his Wallet (which hung on his left shoulder) a Loaf of bread, & a piece of Bacon. I was so horrible hungry, that I could scarce stand upon my leggs, or fetch my breath, so faint was I grown for want of food. I look'd pittifully upon him, and besought him with mine eyes (which is a good dumb eloquence) that he would give me a bit of something for

D

Gods

The Fran-  
ciscan Fri-  
ers charity.

Gods sake: The good Fryer, who read my petition in my looks, said, Blessed be God, Though I should want my self; yet seeing thee in that necessity thou now art, I would rather goe without my self, than to see my poor brother lack. Take this (my pretty boy) quoth he; and much good may it do thee; So my good honest Frier did freely share his victuals with me, wherewith I fill'd my belly, and was well satisfied; and when he was to go his way, the good man (I shall ever call him by that name,) gave me half a Loaf that he had left, and bid me farewell, telling me, thou must content thy self (my child) with this; had I more, more thou shouldst have.

I put it in the linyng of the lap of my Jacket, and fair and softly set forward on my way. By that time I had gone three Leagues more, it was night, then did I supper my self upon my bread: it was the Carriers day, and some of them Inned there; Mine Host of the house bid me go in, and sleep upon the straw; I did so; the next morning when I was about to depart, and ready to leave the Inn, my Host comes unto me, and demands a *Quarto* of me for my lodging, I had it it not, and therefore could not pay it him: the cunning Rogue had a great desire to have stript me out of my Jacket, which was of very good cloath.

When I saw I was put to this streight, my eyes were brim full, and ready to run over with water. One of the Carriers took pity of me, stepped in between us, and said, Mine Host, Let the poor Boy alone, I will pay it for him. His fellows

a.k.d

ask'd me, Sirra, whence are you, and whither go you? He made answer for me, that had paid for me. What uncivil People are ye to ask him that question? Is that so hard a matter to be known? you may easily ghesse, he is run away, either from his Father or his Master. Mine Host then said unto me, how sayst thou my Boy, wilt thou take wages, and dwell with me? I told him I would. Get you in then (quoth he) and rest you here, for I will not imploy you in any other service than the Stable, for the delivering out my (a) Straw and Barley, and see that you keep a good account, and score up truly what every man takes, that neither you, nor they may be mis-reckoned. Take you no care, Sir, (quoth I) I shall do it to a hair.

And thus I remained there a while, having victuals without allowance, and feeding (as they say) upon free cost; and for my work, that was rather a sport unto me, than otherwise, and help'd well to passe away the time: For til those nights that the Carriers came, there was little or nothing to do; as for other ordinary Passengers, it was not a trouble worthy the talking of. Ther I learned to steep Barley in warm water, to make it increase a third part, and to give false measure; I had the cunning strike of the hand; I knew how to hollow it with mine arm, and to run over the Mangers; and if any man did put me in trust to look to his beast, and to give him his provinder, I would be sure to cozen him of one third part of his measure. Some of my Yongsters would come in now and then very neatly in their trickie Garters, and their trim

Mouchato's, as spruce as could be, carrying the show of Gentlemen, but the Devil a Page or Lacky that they had to attend upon them; It was good holding the Bason to these; they are your only *Dons* to endure a fine shaving. With these, we drove a good Trade; For we came unto them, and taking charge of their Hackneys, we did set them up in such places as were appointed for them, where they had the remains of that the others had left, which went for one half of their allowance; and the other half they were presently supplied with (though but bad measure;) but when they came to pay, we gave them a reckoning for the whole. And into the bargain we had our Hens & our Pigs, if not now & then the Foal of an Ass, that did help to share with them. For bountiful natures, and minds that are magnificent, never stick for trifles, nor offer to stand for small matters; so that we had all that we could ask, and they never made any more bones of the matter. Our mouths were the measures, never weighing the set prices of things, nor the Sizes set down in the Proclamation, nor what the Iustices had ordered in that kind, which were formerly hung up in every Inne, with a particular Tax to every thing there specified. For those are never kept, and therefore made little or no reckoning thereof at all. Only they are set up there at our doors, to the end that the *Alcalde* and the (*d*) *Escrivano* may lick their fingers, and receive some monethly profit from the Fees belonging thereunto. For the Stable, it is already well known, what every Horses allowance is, and how much

\* The No-  
day.

it comes to a peece, both for their Straw, their Provinder, and their Standing. For the Kitchin, that was sport alone to us, it made us all merry, for we were quickly upon that call to come in, and nimble, (as having learned our Lessons before hand) in the bringing in of our reckoning. So many \* *Royals* (Gentlemen) and so many *Maravedis* miche yee God diche you, and you are heartily welcome. Being ever sure to reckon rather a *Royal* over, than a *blank* under.

Many (like good wife men as they were) would never examine the reckoning, but lay down the money presently, saying, Lo (my friend) ther's your due. But some fresh-water Souldiers, that were but Novices and young Travellers, plants of the first Leaf, would ask us, therefore, How can it come to be so much, &c? But this was but only to cut their own throats, and to make us to inhaunce the reckoning the higher; for when they once put us to that jump, (besides the raising of our price in the general) we did always find a trick to add something, though it were but for the boyling of their (a) *Olla*. For you must understand, that the word of an Host is a kind of definitive Sentence, there is no appealing from it, but to the Purse; Nor is it wagging or roaring that can serve the turn; your bravings will little benefit you; for your Hosts for the most part, are a company of old Catchpoles, dogged Curs, who out of a scurvy condition that they have, will with a still mouth hunt dry-foot after you, till he come to some good Town, and then he will bawl upon you (like old Cryer) and when he hath seiz'd on you, will accuse you to

\* A *Maravedi* is the thirty two part of a Ryall, which is six pence.

(a) *Olla* is a pot or pipkin, wherein flesh & other things are sod, by the figure Metonym the *Olla* is taken for that which is boyled in it. *Olla podrida* is a very great one, containing in it a variety of things, as Mutton, Beef, hens, capons, Sawfage, Pigs-feet, Garlick, Onions, &c.



the Justice, That you would have set his Inne on fire, or that you did bastinado him with a Cudgel, or that you would have forced his wife or his Daughter; and only that he might do thee a mischief, and be revenged upon thee. Besides we had some Lures in our houses to catch foolish birds withal, If thou leave any thing behind thee, give it thy good word, unlesse thou have the better luck; for it shall be laid up sure enough for thy finding.

What shall I tel thee of the thefts, the tyrannies, the Impudencies, and the villanies, that dayly passe in your Innes and Victualling houses? There is neither the fear of God nor his Ministers amongst them; and for matter of Justice, either ther is none at all to be had against them, or else they take part with them.

## CHAP. II.

*How Guzman de Alfarache came begging to Madrid, and what happened to him there.*

**T**His lazy-life did not sort to my purpose. For I was no better (to speak the best of it) than an Inne-keepers Boy. There did daily passe by many haggard-Hawks, young wandring Lads, much about my years and growth; some with money in their Purse, others begging an almes for Gods sake; whereupon I said to my self, What a devil ayles me? or what scurvy metal am I made of, that I should be more cowardly, and baser minded than other men? in that I am

not sensible, how much I wrong my self; and that of faint-heartedness, and like a Craven (as I am) should stoop to pick a poor living out of such a dunghil kind of life as this? Hereupon I took heart unto me, and set a good face on the matter; and so bidding mine Host God b'wy, I went forth to seek my fortune, carrying some Copper-mohey along with me, gotten in a good warr; and some other lawful purchases that I made; but my store being small, it was quickly gone. When all was spent, I fell a begging; some would give me an (a) *Ochavo*, but most will say unto me, Pardon me, (my Boy) I have not for you. With this poor *Ochavo*, and other his fellows, I did eat now and then with a *gandrumus*, according to my gettings; but this Pardon me (my Boy) I have not for you, did me no good in the world: I might have sat down with a *pereximus*, for any comfort that I found in it.

Guzman  
resolves to  
part with  
his Host.

Guzman  
falls a beg-  
ging.  
(a) Ocha-  
vo, is a  
kind of brass  
money,  
whereof  
two makes  
three far-  
things.

Now because I found begging to be but a poor Trade, I grew so out of heart therewith, that I resolved to follow that occupation no longer. Hereupon, I was minded to make the best I could of those Cloaths that I had on my back: then I began to unbind the Book, and to divide it into Leaves, that is to separate one thing from another, that all might not goe away at once; sorting my clothes into several parcels, consuming one piece after another, till all was gone; selling this, chopping that, and pawning the other, till I had not a rag left.

So that when I came to *Madrid*, I look'd like one that had newly come from the Oar, or some gentle Rower returned lately from the Gallies,

I was so lightly clad, having nothing on but a Canvas pair of Breeches, and a coarse Shirt, and that none of the cleanest, but as foul as foul might be; all to tatter'd and torn, and so rotten with age, that it was ready to fall from my back.

Seeing my self thus out of reparations; and all to be rent and torn; howbeit I sought after service, thinking to win credit with my good words; no man would trust me the more for my fair tongue, but grew rather jealous of my evil conditions; insomuch that I could not meet with any that would give me entertainment, admit me into his service, or suffer me to come within his doors, because I was without a cloak, and so nasty in my other cloaths, that out of a very loathing they were able to turn a mans stomach. They did think, that I was some roguish little Thief, and that if they should take me in, I would filch something from them, and betake me to my heels when I had done.

Seeing my self in this desperate state, counting my self as it were a lost man, I began to follow the Trade of *de la Florida Picardia*, exercising all your Cony-catching tricks, knavish prancks, fine feats, with slight of hand, and whatsoever Rogueries come within the compass of that prowling office. The shame that I had to return home, I lost it upon the way; for travelling afoot as I did, it weighed so heavy, that I was not able to bring it along with me: or perhaps, they that stole my Cloak carried it away with them in the Cape thereof; and this is sure the likelier of the two. For ever since that time I have been troubled with a lazie kind of yawning

ning, and a Fever-lordane, which did prognosticate the Disease I should be sick of to my dying day. A Pox upon shamefastnesse, which hung still upon me, and yet I have none of it; but I began to free my self, and that little shame that was left me, I turned into Impudency. I fell in with other Tassel-gentles, much about my size and pitch, that were high Flyers, and cunning in the catching of their prey. As I saw them doe, so did I, as well as I could; but because I was but newly entred, and was not yet come to that true flying, to seize the Partridge in foot, I did assist them with my best endeavours, refused no pains, followed their steps, and walked their stations: whereby I came to pick up my crums, and to gather a few Blanks together. Thus I sayled up and down, to and fro, still sounding as I went along, to see how many fadom I was off from the shore, and what new Country was upon discovery.

I could now hunt for my supper, as well as the best of them, and knew certainly where to have it; but I was to take heed, that I plaid the true Clock-keeper: for if I failed of my hour, (especially at your Monasteries, & Religious Houses) and did not truly keep the due time, limited and prescribed by them, I was shut out, and left in the dark: so that I had now learned the fashion, to shew my self a mannerly Guest, by staying rather for others, than that others should stay for me. This loytering kind of life was not without its cares; and as idle as it seem'd to be, it was painful enough unto me: for, while I led this Roguish life, I learned to play at Cock-All, at Handie-Pandie, and at Nine-holes: from these

these I went a form higher ; I knew how to play at Noddie, One and thirtie, Quinolâs, and Primera : in a short time I profited so well in these my studies, that I past on to the upper Form. I could tegg a Dye handsomly, and if I had good luck, all was mine own, ( especially if I met with weak Gamesters.) Nor would I change this life of a *Picaro*, this roguish life of mine, for the Abelt that any of my Ancestors ever led.

I had a moneths mind to the Court ; and I went daily refining my wit ; I set an new edge upon my understanding, and enriched my brain with new Philosophie. And seeing others of lesser worth than my self, to grow from a little, to a great deal of wealth ; and from mean beginnings, to come to mighty matters, and to eat their bread without begging : out of a desire that I had to attain to this glorious liberty, and that I might not (as many other) be punished as a Vagabond, and run the censure of a wandering Rogue, I applied my self to carry such burdens, as my weak shoulders were able to bear.

I confesse unto thee that I was somewhat cold in the matter at the first, and fell to it with an ill will, but above all, I was wonderful fearful ; for all beginnings have their difficulties : but after I had taken a relish of this Roguish life, and found the sweetnesse of it. I could tread the true Track of it, and was grown so perfect, that I could have gone blind-fold to my work, and not have stepp'd a foot out of the way. What a fine kind of life was it, what a dainty and delicate thing, without Thimble, Thread, or Needle,  
without

without Pinfers, Hammer, or Wimble, or any other Mechanical instrument whatsoever, more than one onely bare Basket, I had gotten me an Office whereby to live; and such a kind of Office, as seemed to be a bit, without a bone; a back, without a burthen; a merry kind of Occupation, and free from all manner of trouble and vexation?

It was my hap one day to bear in my basket, a quarter of Mutton, for a certain Hosier, or Gentleman Taylor. I had by chance at that time about me, certain old Ballads, which still as I read this or th'other line, I fell a singing, as I went along. My good Master having (as it should seem) listned unto me, look'd back on the sudden, and smiling said, How now (my tatter'd Rascal) a pox take you for a ragga-muffin, can you read, you Rogue? Yes marry can I, Sir, (quoth I) I thank God; I can read reasonable well, but my writing is better than my reading. Sayest thou me so, Boy? And with that he intreated me, that I would teach him to write his name, or to make some mark, that might serve for a subscription, or under-signing (he cared not which) for either would serve his turn. I pray Sir (said I) what good can this do you? What can you benefit yourself, by having learned to make a bare mark, and no more? Me thinks you should have no great use of that alone, unlesse you could write too. Yes marry I have Sir, (quoth he) for I have much work goes through these hands, of such and such great men, I make all the cloaths their Children wear, (and there by the way he reckons me up a bead-roll of these and these Lords)

*A Taylor would faine learn to write his name, or to make his signa, or mark, And the reason why.*

Lords) and therefore I would very fain (if I knew how) learn to write my Name, or to make my mark, that (if occasion were offered) I might not be taken for an Ass, and say (like a Fool as I am) when I am call'd to subscribe; indeed, Sir, you must pardon me, I cannot write. And so this businesse broke off as abruptly as it began.

---

### CHAP. III.

*How Guzman lighted into a Cooks service. He declareth a pretty theft performed by him. He relateth the Vices of Cooks.*

I Enjoyed a free and flourishing kind of libertie, praised by the wise, desired of many, and so much applauded by the Poets. And being now as well trusted, as I was known, I became acquainted with a Caterer, or Steward. This Man had a good confidence in me, trusted me very far, and would often send me away alone by my self, to carry those things home to his House, which he had bought in the Market. This my continued conversation and daily commercement with him, did procure his good liking, and love towards me; insomuch, that he removed me from that Office, and preferred me to be scullion of the Kitchen. Well, he brought me to the Cook my Master. When I came thither, he spake to me in a proud commanding manner. How now (*Sennor* few cloths) what mind drave you hither? what make you here (goodmā Shag-

Shag-rag?) Have you any businesse here? Or doe you come to abide with me? I replied, Yes Sir; Come your wayes then (quoth he) in with me: And if thou dost thy duty (said he) and shalt deserve well at my hands, thou shalt not lose thy labour. I told him, I was very well assured, that in serving his worship, I might gain by the bargain, but lose nothing, because I had nothing to lose. Then he ask'd me, Doe you know (sirrah) what you are to do? All that (I mildly replied) that you shall be pleased to command me, or my self either know, or am able to perform.

He seemed to like well both of my speech and understanding; At my first coming I behaved my self very respectfully towards him, and served him as punctually as I could; and he again made much of me, and us'd me as kindly as heart could wish. But I did not only seek to please my Master (who was a married man) and his wife my Mistresse, even in the meanest services, serving them in all things else besides, both in Town and Country, at home and abroad; taking upon me the Office both of Manservant and Maid-servant, save only that I had never a Gown to put on, nor a Mantle to cover me withall, to wait upon my Mistresse, when she went abroad; but for all other services of the house, as sweeping, rubbing, scowring, setting the Pot over the fire, dressing of meat, making of beds, laying the (b) *Estrado* in order, mending and plaining it, that not a wrinkle was to be seen, and other the like services were my ordinary exercise; (And for that I was the only man) all this was committed to my

(b) *Estrado* is a kind of half pace, covered with Turkey Carpets, and furnished with fair long Cushions, whereon your great Ladies & Gentlemen sit, when they receive any visitors.



my charge: ) But I laboured besides to give good contentment to all the rest of my Masters servants. So that my heels were as nimble to run upon the least boys errand in the house, as the Stewards, the Pages, as the *Ador* or *damos*; for him that rub'd the Horses heels, as for him that was Usher of the Hall. One would have me buy such and such necessaries for him; another, that I would brush, and make clean his cloths; this man that I would get his band washt and starcht for him; that, that I would carry some provision home to his wife; A third to his Wench. And all this I did without grumbling, or muttering; or any the least unwillingnesse in the world. I was never any Tale-carrier, or sower of sedition; nor did I ever discover any secret, or report again what I had heard, though it were not delivered under the seal of silence unto me, or that the relators had laid their finger on my mouth. For I was not so ill bred, but that I knew very well, what and when it was lawfull for me to speak, and when to hold my peace. When I was chidden, I never replied, and made it my study to give them as little cause as I could to find fault with me. I would not willingly have any mans displeasure; and all my care was, to do what I was commanded. And when there was need of my service, or that my helping hand might doe any good, I was seldome or never wanting; I was *lack* at a pinch, I was here, and there, and every where: And albeit these diligences of mine cost me a great deal of labour and pains taking, yet I lost nothing by it; for the good commendations that they gave, and the kind

words

*A silent  
tongue &  
a true  
heart, did  
never hurt  
any Ser-  
vant.*

words that they speak of me behind my back ;  
and the hopes that I had to be well rewarded ,  
seemed to me a sufficient payment.

I did nothing, were it never so small a thing,  
never so little, for the which I had not some-  
thing. All did give me a one thing or other ; <sup>\* A peece of</sup>  
one a *Taria*, another a *Royal*, a third a Doublet, <sup>three half</sup>  
a fourth an old Jacket to cover this poor flesh of <sup>pence.</sup>  
mine ; I did not go so like a tatter'd Rogue, as I  
did before ; my meales were sure and certain ;  
and though I had not any other thing to sustain  
my self withall , I might have liv'd very well  
upon the skimmings of the Pot , and upon the  
tryal of my tast, by essaying whether my boyl'd  
meats were sod enough , and so likewise for my  
roast , reserving still my own allowance whole  
and entire ; I had no need to touch upon that  
that I made profit of. My Gaming which I lear-  
ned in my looser days did me much hurt, for  
look whatsoever I got by means of my place,  
for that I had no house to repair, nor rents to  
buy in, I playd it all away. I was learned Do-  
ctor in that Science, but yet I consumed my E-  
state in following that Trade. Within a few  
days, I grew a refined Gamster, and could play  
well with my hands too , I had learned to filch  
and steal finely.

When my vailes would not serve my turn, I  
would cast mine eyes about the house, where,  
and out of what I might make my provision,  
For those things that belonged to the Kitchen,  
I could make purchase there in the turning of a  
hand, but ever had a care to do it handi-  
somly, and to carry it so cleanly, that they might not  
have the least suspicion of me in the world. Ma-  
ny

ny things which I stole, I hid in the self same room where I found them, with purpose, (if they should chance to suspect me) to pull them out in publick, gaining thereby credit to my self for after times, upon the like occasion. And if the suspicion lighted on another, I presently took hold upon that advantage, and putting it from my self, transferred it on him. Once I remember, I lighted on a happy encounter, which was this.

(a) Guadalcana, signifies rio de la recreatiõ: a River of recreation.

(b) Coca is a drug so called, where with Fishermen are wont to make the fish drunk, & to turn up their bellies upon the water, as if they were dead.

(c) A try-cue con-Rey, is the Span sh word, which is a game at Cards common amongst them.

My Master on a time brought certain friends of his home to his house, good fellows, sworn brothers to Bacchus, Pilots for (a) Guadalcana, and (b) Coca, and he would needs forsooth in kindnesse bestow a Bever upon them, all of them playd well upon the keys of this Organ: the Jacks went up lively, but my Master he tickled it notably, he was an excellent Musician upon a jarre of wine; he was a brave bottle-banger, and a singular tosser-pot. He took me out of one of his cup-bords of his Ambry (which were ever stored with cold meats) a delicate peece of Bacon finely inter-larded, or (to speak more properly) inter-laced with fat and lean, which lookt as fresh and as ruddy, as the blood of a Lamb, that is newly kill'd. The game growing now hot, and the vies seen on all sides, they were all thirty (c) apeece in Kings, merry, rich, and contented; And with this new Shoothing-horn to draw down their drink, they fell afresh to their former play, drinking healths Helter Skelter (and my Mistris had her share too, who did mince and gyg it in this round with as much metal, and as nimbly, as the best dancer of them all) they grew so fine and so mellow, that

you might have stript them ( like Rabbets ) out of their cales, and left them stark naked as ever they were born, and yet they never have known who had done them this harm. Their pieces were overcharged, the powder strong, the charge too great; so that when the fire took them, the smoke and fume thereof flew up to the highest part of all the chimney, wherewith the whole house was so shaken, that some fell down flat, others reeled too and fro; some tript both in their tongue and feet, others were full of their gambol-tricks, each man having his several posture,

My Master and my Mistresse ( as one of the neighbours told me ) scrambled (as well as they could) to bed, leaving all the doors of the house open, the Table untaken away, and the silver Goblet, wherein they drunk their healths, tumbled down on the ground, all which made much for the benefit of the Inventory.

I was by chance at that time in my Masters Kitchen, scowring of the Pans and the Spits, piling up the wood, laying it handsomly together, and doing other things belonging to my office. When that task was done, and I had made an end of all my work, I got me to my lodging; and as I past along, I found all out of order, every thing out of his proper place, all the doors open: the Cup that was fallen down on the floor, I fortunately stumbled on; it silently seemed to intreat me, that I would doe it that curtesie to take it up; I stooped down unto it, to do it that friendly office, looking in the meanwhile round about me, to see whether any mans eyes were upon me, to spy what I was a doing :

but when I saw the Coast was clear, that there was not any body living thereabouts, so that no man could detect me, I put it up, and softly stole away.

And having secured this theft, away went I back again to the Kitchen, where I found work enough to do till it was night, about which time my Master came thither, terribly pained in his belly, and his temples. And finding there but one only fire-brand lying on the Harth, he would needs cudgel my Coat therewith, scolding and railing at me, telling me that I wasted too much wood, and that I would never leave, till I had fired his house. Supper was made ready and orderly served in, which being ended, and all things done that should be done, we went to bed. But I found my Mistresse in an ill taking, her countenance sad and heavy, her eyes cast down to the ground, and full of tears, her heart swollen with grief, all was out of tune with her, and not so much as one word that came from her, till my Master was gone to bed. And then I made bold to ask her, what was the matter that she was so melancholy. She answered, O my *Guzmanico*, (Son of my Soul) a great evil, a great misfortune hath befallen me, wretched woman that I am, cursed was that hour wherein I was born, and in an unlucky time did my Mother bring me forth. By this time I knew where her shooe did wring her: My Pocket was her Apothecaries shop. There lay the restorative. All her lamentations, her wringing of her hands, and other her demonstrations of her sorrow, could not stir up pity in me, or take hold on the least hair of a fellow-kind of feeling.

But

But feigning my self to be very sensible of her affliction, and that it griev'd me much to see her so surprized with grief, I began to comfort her, and to perswade her (all that I could) that her impatience might not force such words from her, as I heard her but now utter, requesting her, that she Would lay open the wound, & tell me what she ayld, & make me a sharer in this her misery, promising (in all that little that I was able to do) to do as much for her, as I would for mine own Mother. O son, (quoth she) your Master (in an ill hour) brought hither some of his friends to make merry this afternoon, and amongst other things, my silver Goblet is wanting, and I know not in the world what to do. What will thy Master say or do when he shall know it? Oh he will kill me, (Son of my bowels, mine own dear child) he will kill me, that is the least he can do unto me. Well, I put on a mourning face, lookt sad, shewing how much I was displeased with this roguish dealing, and how much it did vex me for her sake. And then calling my wits together, I told her, that there was no other way in the world to salve this sore, but that she should be stirring very early in the morning, and get her to the Goldsmiths, and buy another like unto it, and then tell her Husband, that because the Cup was old and stained with many spots, she had caus'd it to be new burnisht over, and made as bright as it was the first day it was bought.

And by this means, this cloud, that threatens such a foul storm, will quickly be over-blown, and all be fair weather again with you.

I offered her withall, that if she wanted money, she should make shift to take it up upon credit, she should have my allowance and my Vails, til all was paid, if she did not find means before of her own to discharge the Debt. She did with a great deal of thankfulness entertain what I had spoken, as well for my good counsels, as the speedy remedy. But it seemed unto her, that it would be very unfitting for her to go from home, and that all alone, and so early in the morning, fearing lest her Husband might chance to know it, who was very jealous of her, and would think she had gone a gadding to some worier purpose. Whereupon she intreated me of all Loves, even for Gods sake, that I would go my self to see and I could get such another as that was; and as for the money, she had enough of her own store to pay for it. This was e'en as I would have it, it hit as pat as a pudding to a Friers mouth. I could not ha' wisht it to have falln out better; for I had already begun to devise and cast with my self, to whom, or how I might sell it, and what chapman I might best find out to buy it of me; for if they should come to scan my person, they might easily be induced to believe, that I had stoln it.

But this business falling out so luckily, and all things sorting so well with me, I went amongst the Gold-smiths, and spake to one of them, that he would make clean this Plate, take out the stains, and beat out the dents, for it had taken some knocks in the fall; I agreed with him for two Royals, for which price he finished his work, and made it look as fresh, as if it had been newly bought out of the shop; I took my cup &  
carried

carried it home with me to my Mistress, telling her, that I had met with this piece at the *fuerza* de (a) *Guadaxara*, and that it amounted in weight to 57 Royals, and for the fashion he would not abate a farthing of 8 Royals.

(a) A place  
so called in  
Madrid.

And this seemed to her, as if it had been but one poor blank, considering the great desire which she had to be freed frō that trouble wherein she was. She told me out the mony upon a table, so that I sold her her own again, as if it had not been the same, or that I had been the man that had stōln it from her. Wherewith she remained contented, and I satisfied. But lightly come lightly gone. Two incounters carried it clean away from me.

These pretty thefts of Wit, I reckoned as things of nothing, and occasion taught me the way: these were natural unto me. But those of permission, and of greater moment, I took great care in managing of them, when need did require: It was a common thing with me, to come neer to the Butchers chopping-block, where the portions allotted to every man for their allowance were cut out and divided. I diligently observed that which passed, I learned the trick of the finger, the bounding of the balance, and all the tricks of weighing, and many would say, I weighed passing well, yet so for mine own advantage, that every mans part should daily come short two Ounces in weight.

Your Cater-  
ers, your  
Cooks, and  
your Butlers  
a company  
of cozening  
knaves.

The Steward he would answer for himself, that the flesh did shrink and dry away, and though he received full weight, and the scales true, yet there could not chuse but be some loss therein, by cutting is out afterwards into so many seve-



ral pieces for Commons, which might very well take up a sixth part. Your Cook, your Butler, your Purveyour, and most of all your Officers, they do all of them filch and steal, and stick not to say, it is their Fees, and that it belongs of right unto them, and this they so openly and impudently maintain, as if they had the Kings letters Patents to shew for it.

There was never yet any kitchingboy so foolish or so unlucky, but that he would make shift to meet with the Giblets of your Geese, your Hens, & your Capons, with the Hocks of a gammon of Bacon, your flaps, Kidnies, and fat of the Shoulders and loyns of Mutton, your Pigs-peticoes, your Calves-feet, Livers, Gisards, sweet-breads, Sauces, Spices, Snow, Wine, Sugar, Oyl, Honey, Candles, Coles, and Wood, not sparing the very Ashes, nor any thing else, (were it Vineger, Mustard, Annis-seed, Carrowaies,) from that which was most necessary, even to those of smallest moment, which are daily spent in a great mans house.

When I came thither first, I confesse there was no man would trust me farther than they saw me, they had no great confidence of me; but by little and little, I got into credit by degrees, first pleasing this man, then contenting that man, and in fine, being willing to serve all, in all that I was able; for he must have a care to please all, that will have all men to please him. To gain friends, is a putting forth of Mony to Interest, & the sowing of seed in a fruitfull soyl. In those things wherein I might put my self forward, I was never slothfull; I did never give way to any just complaints to come against me; nor was I  
ever

ever given to faction, or to the raising of calumnies and evill reports upon any; It was evermore my chief study, to have peace with all men, because it is the daughter of *Humility*; If ill company had not done me harm, I had begun well, and gone on better; I had wherewithall to eat, to drink, to laugh, and to be merry, and might have passed this carreer of my life, with a great deal of content. Many times (when I had ended my businesse) I would take a nap. But when there was nothing to be done at home, your Lackies and Pages of the Court, being a company of Crack-ropes and notable Wags, would make me free of the frying Pan, fright me with snakes, hang on my back, and weigh me down, crying More sacks to the Mill; If by chance they found me asleep, they would clap a fly made of Wax upon the instep of my shoo, and letting it burn there til shoo and Skin were both scorched, and when I begun to stir and stretch, then would their knavery break forth, and cry Fire, fire, fire. Other while they would roll up a Card, or a piece of Paper, Tunnel-wise, and then setting it a fire (blowing out the flame,) they would put it directly under my nose, til the pillars of smoak that ascended to my nostrils, had not only awak'd me, but almost choakt me. I remember, they us'd me so once in this manner, that I knew not in the world where I was, whether sleeping, waking, standing, or sitting; I was e'en mad, I had lost my wits amongst them; yet I took all patiently, never opened my mouth against them, pocketing these and the like wrongs, which I passed over.

All wch I did, that by correcting my self, I might

conserve my self: chusing rather to kill my choler, than my choler should kill me. Sometimes to make trial of me, they would lay baits for me, putting mony in some such place, where I could not choose but find it; and then they would watch me, to see, whether I was light finger'd or no, and had the art of taking up, and were in the number of those that still take up, and ne'r lay down. But because I knew their meaning, & had found out the trick that they would faine put upon me, I said with my self, It will not serve your turn; I am too crafty a curr, to be taken with this bone; you must throw it out to some other dog, you shall do no good with it on me: you have mist your mark (my Masters) you have leapt a little too short, you shall not go beyond me, nor shall you make your self merry with my miseries, nor make merchandize of my credit, nor furnish your *Almoneda* with my infamies. Therefore it should rest there for me, till he that had laid it there, should come himself and fetch it away. Still having an eye, that another should not take it thence, lest afterwards it might be said, I was the man that did it.

Otherwhiles I would take it up my self, and come and bring it unto my Master, and give it him, having always a great care, like a good Fencer, to come fairly off. I filcht & stole whatsoever came in my way, but still carried it so cunningly, that no man could have cause to suspect me.

For those things that appertained to my charge, I was wonderfull prompt and diligent, albeit my Master had been carelesse in willing me to do this, or that; And when there was any work to be done, I never stood looking, when my

my Master would bid me go about it, I would save him that labour. I was the formost of all my fellows, when Birds were brought in, to fall to plucking off their feathers, to scowr the Spits, to make clean the Vessels, to sweep the house, to make, and blow the fire, without saying to another, Doe it you. And me thought it was a fine kind of deceiving of the time, to do that by fair means, which I must otherwise have done perforce. I was ever in action; I had scarce made an end of pulling my Birds, but I presently run me to the Morter, and fell a pounding of Sawces, some for my boy's meats, some for my Rost; all my Iron Vtenfils about the Kitchin, as Spits, Andirons, Tongs, Fire-shovell, Pot-hooks, and the like, kept so neat & so clear, that they lookt like so many Sword-blades, whereon the Cutlers hand had set a delicate glas; my Pots & my Pans, why you might have wiped them with a Cloak of Velvet; my Skimmers, my Ladles, and my Flesh-hooks, were (like Barbers Looking-glasses,) curiously kept in their Cases, and hung up upon several nails, as all things else that were of use had their peculiar place appointed for them, that they might be ready still at hand, where need should serve, without being driven to seek for one thing in one corner, and another in another, bearing still in my mind, how and where I had plac'd them.

In a word, every thing had its deputed place, with much diligence, and very good order. At my spare hours, when I had nothing to doe (which were likely in the Evening) for then I was usually at leisure, the Officers of the house would give me their Vailes, that I might go abroad

broad and sell them for them. I went with them to the Gate that belongs to the Shambles, which was our set place for that businesse, whither came such to buy as had need thereof; sometimes that which I brought was good, sometimes so so, & at other times stinking & stark nought. And all did arise out of that, which they call *Provechos y Derechos*, Fees and Duties, which is two out of every ten; seldome or never were wanting unto us the *Menudillos* or entrails of your Birds, the mamocks of Veal, Partridges & Hens, which were spoyled or lost in the spitting or roasting, or had clung in the boyling to the Pots-side, or fallen in sunder by being over-sod, in the stripping and uncasing of Rabbits and Conies, and the Lard bestowed upon them, being bordered about, and unbroydered as it were with Bacon, scarce leaving so much white as the bredth of my nail, through which their Larding-Needles had not past. There were some other commodities, which being kept too long, before they came to be sold, began to stink; these they had a trick to disguise in that handsome manner, that they should seem to be fresh and sweet. Every one did set forth his own ware as well as he could. I sold likewise Neats-tongues, Hogs-cheeks, powdered pessels of Pork, English Pasties of Venison, and peeces of Bacon, three fingers thick of fat. Behold what undue duties, what unprofitable profits, and what hurtful and ungainful gains these were, things able to undo a Noble man, to make him wast his Wealth, mortgage his Lands, and sell his Vassals.

I liv'd amongst a company of Wolves, and I lear.

learned of them to howl, and devour Lambs, as they did. I was a reasonable good Scholar, for my time, albeit in a different kind of learning, but at last, I lost all fear : I had learned now to swim without Bladders; I was flush enough now to forsake their nest; all did game and swear, all did steal and lurch, and I did as I saw others do before me. From small beginnings great matters arise.

I began (as I told you before) to play a little, to lurch a little, and to steal a little ; But at length I began to enlarge my strides, like little children, when they have been taught a while to goe alone. I was now perfect in my pace, and had the trick to take one in the hundred. I no more held it ill, but as a thing lawful, and to be permitted. I bought therewith some few necessaries, that I stood in need of; the rest I threw away at play. I once remember, that contesting about a chance with other young Lads about my pitch, we were so loud, in one of the Courts of the house where we plaid, that with the noise thereof you would have thought the whole house would have fallen down about our ears. Our Master spake to the Usher of the Hall, that he would goe see what the matter was ; who found us together by the ears, which made the fault the greater. And (exceeding his Commission) he basted our shoulders with Cudgel-deaw, making the dust flie out of our coats, til he had beaten our bodies all black and blew ; The marks whereof appeared afterwards when we came to put off our shirts ; which likewise occasioned the losse of my credit amongst them; for, from that time forward they had

had an eye still over me; and lookt a little more narrowly into my water. And this was it that gave the first beginning to my utter undoing; as by and by I shall more plainly deliver unto you; And what knavery I had in me, I learnt it of the Officers, and the other servants of the house; I was but coarse Sugar till they refined me.

When I first began to serve, I applied myself to my work, and sought to please, but afterwards, my ill-acquaintance did sweetly undo me. Idleness was a great help thereunto, if not the sole cause of all my hurt.

Of all these my mad pranks and crosse fortunes that did befall me, scarce one of a thousand came to my Masters ears; because being willing (as I was) to please them, and to get their good will, they would not have my Master to conceive hardly of me, and so put me away. But for some negligence of mine, and other things that were too transparent, My Master grew somewhat angry with me, and spur'd hard to overtake me. It so fell out, that he was one day sent for to prepare a Feast for a certain Prince, that was a stranger newly come to Court, and carryed me along with him, that I might transplant the Onion; that is, take up all the leavings, Reliques, Vails, Profits or Fees, (as the custome is) belonging to this Office.

We were no sooner come into the Kitchen, but all our provision was brought in unto us. My Master fell presently to work; and very nimbly with a great deal of dexterity began to chop this, to divide that, and break that o-

ther t  
by the  
of a s  
the lik  
apper  
due T  
(bein  
get hi  
thing  
unto  
ry ma  
quiet

N  
wher  
me t  
fell  
there  
very  
ping  
in su  
mad  
ing t  
so he  
an e  
fire  
seet  
the  
the  
My  
hal  
way  
disc  
hea  
con  
we

ther

ther thing asunder, putting some things apart by themselves, others (especially if they were all of a sort) he heaped up altogether, taking the like order in all the rest of those things that appertained unto him (as a lawfull Tax and due Tribute, payable to his place) lest he might, (being busied about many other things) forget his own right, and confusedly intermix one thing with another; It being meet & just to give unto *Cesar*, that which is *Cesars*, and that every man should take possession of his own, and quietly enjoy what of right belonged to him.

Now about the shutting in of the Evening, when it began to be dark, my Master willed me to bring the Sacks. I brought them, and fell to filling; which (being well practised therein) I pack up every thing that was there, very handsomly, and very speedily. And clapping them on my shoulder at such a time, and in such a manner, that I might not be seen, he made me make four returns, in which journeying to and fro, I could hardly fetch my breath, so heavily was I laden. Now when I had made an end of this businesse, he will'd me to make a fire, to hang over the Kettles, see the water seeth, pull Fowl, scald the Chickens, findge the Capons, scorch the Partridge; in which and the like I bestowed a great part of that night. My Masters Cake (good man) did not bake half currently, the byas did not run the right way, he was shrewdly out of tune, and much disquieted in his mind; it still running in his head, that his Wife was all alone; and that she could not either well order such a deal of wealth as he had sent her in; or that haply  
some



some unexpected storm might befall him in his absence.

Hereupon whilst his thoughts were thus troubled, he calls me unto him, and says unto me; *Guzmanillo*, I pray thee hie thee home, and have a care to that which thou carryest hence, see that all be safe, nothing lost, open thine eyes and look about thee. Tell thy Mistressse that I stay here, have a care to the house, and as soon as it is day hasten again to me. I did so; I deliver my Message to my Mistressse, I call for Pinns and Pack-thread; I plac'd them up above in a Gallery, where they hung in a fresh and open air. There did I fyle upon strings the Trophies of that Victory. It was a glorious and goodly sight to see the several plumage, and diverse-coloured feathers of Capons, Partridges, Turtles, Hens, Peacocks, Thrushes, Veldefares, Pidgeons, Quails, Chickens, Doves, and Geese. And taking forth from amidst all these the Conies heads, they look

\* These seven sons of Lara were brave Warriors, and conquered all where they came, and their name is used by way of Proverb, when something is wanting yet to be done.

as if they had come peeping out of their berries. I hung in another part of the Gallery Gammons of Bacon, joynts of Veal, Red Dear, wild Bore, Mutton, Neats-tongues, Pigs, and Kids.

Thus all the Gallery was hung round with this kind of tapestry, upon very good Nails, and strong Pins, that I had put up for that purpose. So that I assure thee by the faith of an honest man, according to that fair show that it made there, I had brought home two parts of five; nor was this conquest yet fully ended; for there were yet wanting those seven *Infantes de Lara*, to make the feast compleat. All the rest

was very well fitted, & I very weary, for I had wrought very hard. My Mistris lodged in a lower room, & got her to bed. I, whē I had made an end of work, did the like, & went to bed, lapping my self in my Blanket, which God knows was a sorry one, (for in that Countrey, they doe not use to allow Sheets, nor any more save an old Straw-bed, to such poor boys as my self) I was very careful to rise betimes, according as my Master had commanded me. When behold, (God blesse me) about three of the Clock in the morning, I heard beneath in the Court a cruel Skirmish among the Cats which were making of a banquet upon a piece of *Poor John*, a dry kind of Fish, which they had drawn out by chance through the Tyles of one of our neighbours houses.

I lay in my bed, as naked as ever I was when I first came from my Mothers wombe : I did not think that any body should have seen me : I started up in a trice, and as if the *Moors* had been come to have carried away all my Kinred Captives, and this diligence of mine would have serv'd to set them free, I hie me with all the haste I can, and come running down the stairs amain, that I might be there in time, and might prevent that mischief, which is wont to grow, when succours are too slow.

In a businesse of that importance, I thought all delays were dangerous. My Mistris, as she was gone to bed before me, so she had got up before me. She heard this stirr as well as I, and thought perhaps with her self (as very well she might) that I was fast asleep, and did not hear the noise. She, though she went to bed in her smock,

smock, yet as her fashion was, she would put it off before she slept, & lye all night stark-naked; and so was she now, having not so much upon her to cover her nakednesse, as the inheritance of our Grandam *Eve*, neither Smock, nor any other covering in the world.

And thus stark naked as ever she was born, forgetting through her haste to clap any thing upon her body, she came running down like one out of her wits, with a light in her hand, to save her goods. Her thought and mine jumpt both alike, in a busiens that did nearly concern us both, and the noise on either side but little, for we both came thither bare-foot.

Now we both of us meet in the Gallery; she, stricken with wonder to see me there; and I almost affrighted out of my wits, in looking on her. She suspected that I was some *Phantasma*, some Hob-goblin, or wandering Ghost, and setting the light fall out of her hand for fear, she gave withall a great scritch; and I that was affrighted as much with so strange and foul an Apparition, and seeing her to make towards me with a Candle in her hand, I gave a greater scritch than she, thinking it had been the soul of the Steward of our house, who dy'd but some two days before, and that he was come thither to level his Accounts with my Master. She scricht out so lowd on the one side, that the neighbours might hear her all over the street, and mine was so shrill, that they might almost have been heard all over the Town. She fled as fast as she could drive to her Chamber, as if the Devil had been at the tail of her; I strove to make as much haste to mine; the Cats they began

began to flie, and as glad as we to be gone. But to see the ill luck of it, upon the very first stair as I was going up, I stumbled upon the Cat of the house, and treading upon her in the dark, she scracht me by the leggs with her nails: then did I verily think with my self, that some Ghost or other followed me at the heels, and was come to carry me away, and that he was now catching at my soul, and ready to tear it out of my body: wherewith being scared, I fell and brake my shins against the stairs, having grated off the skin, even almost to the Bone; nor did my nose scape free, that was broken as well as the rest. Neither of us two could understand, or certainly suspect, who the other should be, all did succeed so in an instant, and were both called out at the sound of one and the same Bell; till that I having fallen on the ground, and she having hid her self between her sheets, we began to know one another by the lamentation and mourning that we made. With this fright that she had taken, my Mistresse retentive facultie had shrewdly failed her, and the lock of her belly being loose, and the bolts of her breech none of the fastest, her postern door flew wide open, & before she could recover her Chamber, flirtd the excrements of her intrails, part in the Portal, and part in the open Court, that White-pot of hers being stuck full of Cherry-stones, which it should seem she had swallowed down whole. I was a good while ere I could make all clean, I swept it, and wassht it, and did all that I could to make all handsom again; for the keeping clean of the house did properly belong to my charge; as a thing wholly committed to my care.

My Mistresse was much ashamed of this foul accident, and I more: for albeit I did write man, yet was I but a young Lad to speak of, and a meer child in the knowledge of these things; I was as modest as any Maid of them all, and as tender stomach'd, and had I been more than I was, I should have been ashamed for her shame, and have blush'd, if not for mine own, yet for her sake. It did grieve me very much that I had seen her in this manner, as I have told you; for as I live, I would not willingly for all the world have lighted upon such an uncouth casualty as this was: But (do all that I could) she could never be perswaded, but it was my knavery, and my roguery, and that I did it of purpose, nor all the oathes that I used unto her, could make her to alter her mind, reduce her to reason, make her capable how and by what means this hapned, or give her any the least assurance of my innocency.

From that day forward, I utterly lost her good will; and I knew so much afterwards by a neighbour of hers, whom she acquainted with all that had hapned. For that which did trouble her most, and did even vex her to the heart, was, not for my finding of her naked, and unatray'd; but because she had beray'd her self. As for all the rest she did not care a Pin; for most women desire nothing more especially those that have a good opinion of themselves, have consulted with the clearnesse of their skins, and are privy to their own perfections.

When I saw that nothing would serve the turn, and that neither perswasion, nor protestations would perswade with her, I took it for

an ill sign. Never did she look straight upon me afterwards, nor ever exchanged word with me good or bad.

When it was broad day, back went I to my Mill. But when I came to my Master, not a word of what had past. I was Mum-budger, and durst not open my lip to him (for my life) in that businesse. He ask'd me whether all those things were safe at home? and whether I had set them handsomly in order? I told him, all was well, and well ordered. He imploy'd me in some things. And I can assure you, that my Master and his Companions, and I and mine, such as were helpers, and wrought there for him, had more ado, to gather together, and hide what he had stoln, than we had in the dressing and seasoning of all the rest of our meats. What did not we call for without controul? What was given us without grudging? What did we not receive with a great deal of glory? How little was spent, and how much was stoln? Sugar was demanded for our Tarts; and for our Tarts, Sugar. So as we had for every thing twice or thrice over.

This made me to think, that my fore-teeth were no lesseable than other mens; I likewise had a Soul in my body, as well as the best of them; I wanted not a jot of any thing, that should make me a man; My Armour was not without its Rivets, to buckle all close. I waxed weary with pulling Fowl, blanching of Almonds, and the kernels of Pine-apples, with providing of scalding waters, and other things: I had then on at that time, an old Shirt,

and a Doublet that was all torn.

Amongst other thing that came to my Masters share, was a Panniar of Eggs; I made thither, and took out a good company of them, some few of them I clapt in my bosom, betwixt my body and my shirt, the rest I thrust into my Pockets, and the linings of my Breeches. I did not doe this so much for mine own private interest, but that I might say another day, that I kist the Bride; Or that it should be hit in my Teeth, that I had been at the Court, and not seen the King. The crafty Rogue my Master had found me out; and that he might sanctifie himself by my sin, and justifie his honesty by my theft, the *Major-Doms* being present, and other principal servants of the house, when I was about to goe forth to put this poor purchase of mine in some safe place out of sight, he fell upon me like a Lyon, and laying hold on my coller, he began to play *Rex* with me, taking me to *coram nobis*, haling me by the hair of the head, and treading me under his feet.

You may very well imagin how wel'-conditioned this Merchandile was like to come home, being with his beating of me he had broke them all to pieces, making both the Whites and the Yolkes thus batted both together, to drop out at my knees. It did grieve me so much the more, that my Master should use me thus hardly; had it been done by a stranger, or so, I could better have born it. I saw I was to suffer, and therefore I past it over, not replying otherwise unto him, then by lifting up mine eyes unto heaven, which were brim full

of

of tears, and ready to run over.

Now when we were going home, my Master said unto me, (*Guzmanillo*) hearken unto me; That beating which I bestowed on thee to day, did concern me more than thou art aware; I know I had no reason to use thee as I did; but to morrow I will give thee a new pair of shoes, which shall be better worth to thee than thy eggs would have been. This was welcome news, and pleas'd me very well; for those I then wore were old, and all to fitters. But I shrewdly suspect, that my Mistresse after we were come home, had made her complaint, for from that time my Master did ever after cast a fowre look upon me; so that now we hear no more words of our new shoes, they are forgot. When I found his favour to be with-drawn from me, I sought to give them all the content I could, serving him with more care than e-  
 ver, not being wanting in any thing that be-  
 longed to the businesses of the Kitchen.

Upon a Festival day, we had made certain Pies and Pasties, some of one sort, some of another; whereof there was some (though not very much) of the Past left; and the Monday following was the running of the Bulls. In the Dust-Basket, amongst other refuse things out of the sweepings of the house, it was my hap to meet with the Shank bone of a Heyfer, which was in a manner whole; I had need of a few Blankes to make merry with, and presently (a toy taking me in the head) in the turning of a hand, I had lapt up my Shanker in the Past that remained; which (as I had handled the matter) was to the onward show a goodly

*Guzman  
 tries his  
 wit to get  
 some mo-  
 ney.*



fair Conie ; that you could not distinguish the one from the other. Away went I with it to the wonted place, where I used to vent my other things, with a purpose to cozen some stranger with it ; But because I was in hast, and could not stay long, I might not wait to make choice of my Merchant. There comes me to buy it of me a goodly grave Gentleman Usher, ( his head and beard as white as Milk ) We agreed upon the price, and he was to give me for it three Royals and a half. Me thought I saw the Heaven opened, in having made so quick a Market; the more hast the worse speed.

He puts me first under his arm a little Register book, about the bignesse of an Almanack, which he had in his hand ; Then he hangs me at his Girdle, his Gloves and his Handkerchief, with a great deal of deliberation; After that, he takes me a Case out of his Pocket, wherein were his Spectacles, he pulls them forth, wipes them, and puts them on, wherein he spent two long hours. Then he went distilling out of a little leather Purse one *Quarte* after another, and putting them in his hand, every half *Quarte* seemed to be a *Quartile*, giving every one of them half a dozen turns at the least, holding them against the Sun. I had scarce received my money of him, when loe, my Master was at my back, who missing me at home, came forth to seek me. And having thus found me napping, he took me fast by the arm, and when he had me sure, he said unto me, What Pawn ( my youth ) have you redeemed here? My Gentleman-Usher was present at all this passage; the Devil ( I think ) kept him there  
all

all this while, for the disclosing of this my secret.

I saw my self now in the fuds, and knew not which way to get out; I could not quote my Author, nor yield any good reason for what I had done; he afterwards dives me into my pocket, and when he had fisht out my monie, he cries, Let go you Rogue, Let go, I say: Are you the man, that so many have commended unto me? Are you that dead Flie, that would do no hurt? Are you that faithful servant, forsooth, whom I trusted with my goods, and all that I had? Have I kept thee in my house? given thee of my bread? cherisht, and made so much of thee, and all for this? I will no more be troubled with such a rogue as thou art. See thou com'st no more in my house, and come not, I advise thee, neer my door; for he that will be false in a little, will (if occasion be offered) be false in greater matters.

And so giving me a cuff on the ear, and a kick on the breech, both at one instant, in the presence of my Merchant, he had almost laid me flat on the ground. I was so ashamed, that I knew not what answer to make him, though I had stuff enough in store for him; I hung down my head, held my peace, and went my wayes.

## CHAP. IV.

*Guzman being put from the Cook his Master, proves a notable cunning Rogue. How he cheated a Grocer, left Madrid, and went for Italy.*

**M**Y Master was now bent against me, his Wife had set him on, and he thereby so incensed, and so apt to take hold of any occasion, that every the least smarting of the eye, or but the wagging of a Scraw, would have been matter enough of exception against me; and though I should have serv'd him never so well, never so truly, and laboured (as if my life had lain upon it) not to give him any the least cause of dislike, yet all would not serve the turn, he was minded to put me from him, and I must be packing, faulty, or not faulty, all was one. Now I am thrown out into the street, persecuted, and put away: What shall I do? Whither shall I go? Or what will become of me? Seeing I am thrust out of doors for a Thief, who will now entertain me in his service? Who admit me into his house? Then did I begin to think of my former troubles, and how well I bore them out, by bearing of a basket. I was wont to be a maker of Fritters, Buns, and Cracknels, and was now fain to follow mine old trade afresh. All that I got, I either played it away, or unjustly stole it. I had bought me neither goods nor land with it, neither house, nor clothes, nor any thing where-withall to cover me. All was spent and gone; As it came, so it went; in at one door, and out

at another; what I gain'd, that I lost; what I serv'd for, that I wasted: yet my main stock was still remaining with me, to wit, my lost shame; For what should a poor man do with shame? Bashfulness brings no benefit. I was now well known to all the Town, and I had money in my Purse to buy me a Basket; but before I would resolve to saddle it to my back, I did night and day visit my Masters friends and acquaintance, to see if any of them would have pity of me, and take me into their service. For I had learned now a little skill, and would have been glad to have better'd my knowledg. Some of them did relieve me a little, entertaining me with a piece of bread or so.

But it seem'd, they had heard such things of me, that they quickly dismiss'd me, having no mind in the world to receive me into their service.

With these diligences that I us'd, I had performed my duty, and complied with that whereunto I was bound, that I might not accuse my self hereafter, of returning to my former course of life, out of meer idlenesse, and for the avoiding of labour, and that I might not work and take pains for my living. But a man can do no more than he can do, I did my endeavor. I began to bear my burthens, I did eat what was needfull, (for I never made my belly, my god.)

By this my orderly dyet, and moderate feeding, my mind was not dull'd, my body was not weakned, I did nourish no ill humours, I did breed no diseases, I had my health, I was sound and lusty, and never wanted money to play.

In

In my drinking, I was very temperate, never using it, but when I must needs, and then too very sparingly.

*The Market-place,  
the Rogues  
Hall.*

We had in the place near unto *Santa Cruz*, our proper Mansion, bought, and repaired at other mens cost. There were all the meetings and the Feasts. I was up with the Sun, I diligently waited on those shops, and attended often on the Bakers; and if I wanted employment there, I got me into the Shambles, to see what good I could do there. I made my harvest in the morning, to serve me all the whole day after. The Parishioners thereabouts, that had no servants of their own, for these businesses, would hire me to carry home their provision for them, Which I did faithfully, and diligently, without wronging them the least hair of my head. No man of my place had more credit amongst them, or was better trusted than my self. So that my Companions wanted work, whilst I had enough for my self, and some other good fellow my friend, whom I would make choice of to help me. Then we were but a few of us, and we went up and down from place to place: but now there are very many, the number is much increased, and all of them have their hands full, and glad is he that can catch them up first. And I can assure you, that there is not any Estate, that hath more enlarged it self, then that of the *Picaroes*, for all your Rogues apply themselves to the bearing of Baskets, and carrying of Burthens.

It so fell out, that there were certain Companies of Souldiers to be raised, and Captains appointed for the conducting of them. Now when

when any such thing happeneth, it is presently spread abroad over all the Town, and every private house is made a Council of State. Every Porter, and Basket-bearer will have a hand in the Government of the Common-wealth, as well as other men, they will fall into discourse of the business, vent their opinions, and conclude what things ought to be done, how carried, and who fittest for the managing of these great affairs. And it often times so comes to passe, that they know the essential points of things, and participate of the secrets of State; some there are, nay, very many of them, have good wits; Besides, going all day long from one place to another, through divers streets, and into sundry houses; and being that they be so many, and so scattered and divided over all the Town; of many they hear many things: And though happily one, or say a hundred, should shoot wide of the mark, and discharge the follies of their idle brains; yet doubtlesse there are others again, that discourse wisely, and will come very neer unto, if not hit the Pin.

Now we (having raked together all the news of the whole Town) when we are met together, and are sitting at Supper, every man opens his store, and tels what hath past, some relating one thing, and some another. Besides, there is not that Victualling-house or Tavern, but whatsoever hath been talked of there, is brought to our ears. For there likewise are held your open Courts, and publike Assemblies, where all questions and doubts are winnowed and sifted to the full, nothing escapes their search and inquiry; There they limit the Turks power,

power, reform Councils, and tax your Ministers of State.

In a word, there all things are made known, there all things are treated of, and they are all Law-givers, that prescribe rules to all; for they speak all out of *Bacchus* his mouth, conversing with a full belly, and a free heart. With this then, which we have learned from others, we come afterwards to sit and determine of every particular passage, every man according to his several opinion, setting down his several censures. One while we resolve, that these Companies are to march towards *Italy*, and that they went for good, and past current amongst us.

Me thought this was a very good occasion for me to take hold on, for the executing of my former desires, that I might know mine own blood, and whence I was descended, how I was ally'd, and of what quality my Parents and Kinred were. But I was so tatter'd and torn, and so utterly unprovided of all things for this my intended journey, that the bridle of Reason made me stop, and held me from going forward. But notwithstanding, my mind ran still on nothing else.

I fate me down neer unto one of the Shops where my self, and this my other Associate were wont to make our *Rendezvous*; And leaning my cheek (in a melancholy manner) upon my hand, being fully resolved to goe, though I were but in the place of a Stragler, to wait upon the Souldiers, and to carry their luggage for them.

Whilst I was devising this with my self, on the suddain I heard a voice, which said, *Guz-*

man, G  
my fa  
Voice  
Groce  
under  
neer a  
my h  
would  
to see  
me, a  
no soe  
some  
ver an  
ked h  
Copp  
away  
chant  
at my  
He  
which  
ning  
desire  
the e  
beate  
on th  
put i  
mon  
cont  
ford  
then  
diou  
thy  
they  
leav  
had

man, *Guzmanillo*? I look'd about, and turned my face towards the place from whence the Voice came. And I perceived at last, it was a Grocer, that stood under the walking-place underfet with Pillars, that call'd me unto him, neer adjoyning to the Butcher-row: I held up my hand, and made a signe unto him, that I would hasten thither. I got me up, and came to see, what he would with me. He spake unto me, and bid me open my Basket. I did so. That no sooner done, but he throws me into it about some two thousand five hundred *Royals* in Silver and Gold, and some few *Quartes*. I asked him, To what Brasier I should carry this Copper? Copper, you Rogue? Come, up and away with it, for I must goe pay it to a Merchant a stranger, that had sold me some Wares at my shop.

*Guzman resolves to steal a sum of money, and puts it in execution.*

He said one thing, and I thought another: which was, to shew him a trick at the next turning. And believe me, the joyful news of a desired birth, did never come more welcom to the ears of a loving Father; Nor the Mariner beaten by tempest, did with more joy discover on the suddain the Harbour, that he sought to put into; Nor any rendred Town, to that famous Captain that besieg'd it, gave so much content, nor had so sweet a sound with it, or afforded so pleasing an Accent; as I conceived then in my soul, hearing that sweet and melodious voice of my Grocer, when he said, Open thy Basket. Me thought it was a brave word, they were letters of Gold ingraven in my heart, leaving it full of joy, but much more when they had qualified themselves, by actually putting me



me into a quiet and peaceable possession of that, which I was perswaded would be my best remedy.

Vpon this luckie incounter, I began already to dispose of this money, and to change my course of life. I laded my shoulders with it, feigning, that it did weigh very heavy; but my heaviness was the more, that there was no more of it. My honest Grocer, he (good man) goes afore, and I follow after, but with a wondrous desire to meet with some throng, or presse of people in some street or other, or to slip aside into some house, where I might effect my purpose. Fortune (as good luck was) had in the very nick, fitted me with one, just according to the measure of my desire. For, if I would have wish'd for an opportunity, I could not have desired a fairer. For as I was entring into the principal Gate, I got me away some three streets from thence by a blind postern door, and fetching bouts from one corner to another, with somewhat a quick, but not discomposed pace, that I might better avoid all suspicion, I went away gallantly, winding this way, and turning that way, till I had got to (c) *Puerta La Rega*, where I eased my self of my load, and made down to the River. From thence I crost over to (d) *Casa de Campo*, and being holpen by the night, I walke (through a little thicket of Alder-trees, Poplars, and other well-grown bushes of thorn) a League farther: in the thickest part whereof I cast Anchor, and had now pitcht my Standard, that I might with my mature counsel think upon things to come, and what fruit and benefit I might make of my late pur-

(c) I chief  
Gate so  
called.

(d) A house  
of pleasure  
belonging  
to the King  
of Spain,  
not far  
from Madrid.

purchase. For it is not enough to begin well, nor to go on well, but to end well. For to little use serve good beginnings, and better proceedings, unless they be crowned with prosperous endings. What good would this theft have done me, if I had been taken with it, but to lose that, and with it, perhaps my ears, if not to have been hang'd for my labour, if I had been of years? There I entred into consultation with my self, what I were best to do: I made tryal where the water was deepest, and there where the bushes were thickest, I made a deep hole; and wrapping the money in the linings of my breeches and my doublet, I put it in, covering it over very handliomly with sand and stones; setting up a mark that I might not forget the place where I had hid it, hankering thereabouts, that I might ever and anon have an eye upon it, for the space of almost fifteen days. Some nights I went from thence to the neighbouring places thereabouts, to get me some victuals for three or four dayes, returning presently back again to my old haunt, keeping my self close, after the Sun once began to peep forth, in that wood adjoyning to the (a) Pardo.

Hither in this manner as you see, had I withdrawn my self, till the Hue and Cry were past and gone, which undoubtredly was made after me. Now by this time they had lost my footing, and I conceiving with my self, that the Coast was now clear, and that I might safely passe, that I might remove my Tent, and march forward, I made me up a little fardle of the old linings that were left of my jerkin,

(a) Pardo  
is a house  
of pleasure,  
seated in a  
wood, be-  
longing to  
the King of  
Spain, near  
to Madrid.

kin, wherein I had closely lapt up this my heart-blood. So that I had nothing now left me, save the old linings of my Breeches, poor ragged Doublet, and a shirt all torn and full of holes, but all as white, and as clean as a curd, for I had lately washt them. So that I was appparelled all in white; being wonderfully fitted to make one in a Morris-dance. I got me two delicate fine walking Cudgels, which I had cut my self, and pill'd off the Rind, and made as smooth and neat as could be devised. On the one I hanged the precious bundle which I bare at my back; the other I made a Trunchion of it to carry in my hand. I was fat and full fed, and began to be weary of being any longer a Conie in that Warren, fearing lest one of the Keepers, or some other Ferreter, should find me there in the Berry, and pull me out as a suspicious person; To prevent that, I began to take my journey by night, when it was dark, going out of the rode-way; taking crosse-pathes, by-places, and untrodden tracks, passing thorow *La Sacra de Toledo*, a certain Territory belonging to that Kingdom, till I came two leagues beyond it, to a little place that stood in a bottom called *Acuqueica*; whither I had reached betimes in the morning. There I rested my self under the shadow of certain Quince-trees, where I meant to spend that day. Where, er'e I was aware, I found hard by me a pretty young stripling, much about my pitch. He seemed to be some Citizens Son, who out of some unadvised consideration, as mine was, had forsaken his Parents to travel abroad, and go see the world. He

car-

carried his Fardle at his back, and being but a young Novice, bred up daintily, and newly taken from his Mothers teat, the Milk yet hanging on his lips, was weary of his burthen, and himself seemed heavy, in having so heavy a load: sure, he had no great mind to return home again to his friends; and as little, that they should find him out. He walkt as I did, in the day thorow Groves and Thickets, and in the night along the High way, seeking covert, where to shrowd himself. Which the rather I ghesse to be so, for that, from our arrival there, until it were night, that we were to depart, he did not budge a foot from that place where I was. When we were to go our ways, taking up his Fardle very heavily, he let it fall again to the ground, saying, Gods curse go with thee, a little thing would make me to leave thee here behind me.

Now I must tell you by the way, that we had had some talk together before, and exchanged (as occasion offered) good store of words, taking account one of another of our Voyages, and what, and whence we were; he did not deal truly with me, and I would not confesse my self to him; For by mine own lies, I knew those that he told me. All that I could suck from him, was, that he acquainted me with his wants.

Now finding the conjecture good, and the distaste great, which he had taken at that heavy burthen which he bore at his back, but much more, that his purse was so light, I began to conjecture with my self, that it might haply be a suit of clothes; wherupon I ask'd him, what luggage he carried, which did give him so

much trouble, and made him so weary? He told me it was a sute of apparel. This suted well with my desires; the induction (me thought) was good. Thereupon I proceeded farther, and told him, Sir, I could give you reasonable good counsell, if you would be willing to accept of it. He intreated me to give it him, and that finding it to be such, he should be very thankful to me for it.

My advice then unto him was; that since he went laden with that, which as yet he had no great need of, nor would it much import him, if he had, that he should rid himself of it, & have recourse to that, which might be more necessary for him. Here you carry a wardrob, or what else soever it be about you; I would wish you to sell it, and put it in your purse; for besides that it will weigh lesse, you shall make profit of the money you shall receive for it.

The young youth discreetly replied, This advice of yours I like well, and would follow it, but I hold it impertinent for the present. And, counsell without a cure, is a body without a soul. What doth it import me to sell it, if I want a Chapman to buy it? I have no occasion to goe into any Town, either to truck for it, or to sell it, and no body will buy it of me, that does not know me.

Then I demanded of him, what pieces they were that he had in his pack; He told me they were certain clothes for change, when he was minded to shift those others that he had on his back. I askt him of the colour, and whether it had been much worn? He answered me, that it was a mingled colour, and reasonable good. This pleas'd me better and better,

There.

Thereupon I offered him present payment if the clothes did fit me.

The Youth began to look sadly upon me, as one that had been struck into a muse, and fell to eye me from top to toe; for all that I had on my back, was not worth so much thred as would serve to bind up a farthing-worth of Saffron, it was not worth one poor small Comin-seed, and yet I should have the face to offer him money for his clothes. It may be it entred into his conceit, that I was a little young Thief, and that I would put some trick or other upon him. For he stood in suspence, consulting with himself, whether he were best to shew them unto me, or no: For he knew not how to trust me. And my fashion was then such, that he could not hope, or surmise, that any good thing should come from me. I did presently apprehend his thought; and that I might reduce him to a better opinion, I said, My pretty little Youth, I would have you know, that I am as good a man as your self, and every way as well born, though I have forborn till now to give you account what I am: but because thou mayst lay aside all fears and jealousies, I am now minded thou shalt have it. My native soyl is *Burgos*, there was I born, and thence did I set forth, (as thou doest now) reasonable well accoutred. I have already done that, which I now advise thee unto, I sold my cloaths, as having then no need of them, and with that money which I had for them, together with that which I brought from home, I will buy me other, when I shall come where I shall have occasion to use them. And by being carefull in looking well to my money, (hiding it in some secret place about me) and

by travelling upon the way in these tatter'd raggs, (which I now have on) I secure my life and passe freely to and fro : For no man will see upon him that is poor ; He lives safely without any fear at all of Thieves to rob, or assault him him on the way. If you have any mind to it, sell me what you have no need of, and doubt not my payment, for I am well able to do it. I am neer to *Toledo*, whither I am bound ; I would gladly go in a little handsomer, and not in this base and vile habit that I have now about me. The Youth undid his Fardle, takes me out a Cloak, a pair of Breeches, a Cassock, two Shirts, and a pair of Silk Stockings, all as fit for me, as if they had been made of purpose for me. I agreed with him for a hundred *Royals*, I ripe open the one side of my bundle, and took out thence as many *Quarles* as serv'd the turn. The bargain ended, we shook hands, and parted. He went to seek his fortune, I know not whither, And I entred into *Toledo*.

Guzman  
comes to  
*Toledo*,  
& puts  
himself in  
handsome  
apparel.

The first thing that I did the next morning, was the altering of my Doubler, my Shooes, and my Hat ; I took off that Tassata that was on the Cape of my Cloak, and put on other of another colour ; I clapt new buttons upon my Cassock ; I took off the sleeves that were of Cloth, and in their stead set to others, that were of Silk : so that with a little cost, I had quite altered the fashion of those clothes I had bought ; fearing lest for my sins sake, or by some other misfortune, I might be taken in some trap. For if (by chance) this Youths friends should send, & make inquiry after him, & should haply lite upō me, & find his clothes on my back, they would presently suspect that I had kill'd

him, to get his clothes, and so drive me to give them an account what was become of him.

When I had fitted my self to my mind, I walk't up and down the City some two days together, making inquiry where or in what place were any Companies of Souldiers, that were to go upon service, but could not hear of any certain news. Thus I went beating the air as one that was idle, and had nothing else to do. And as I pass'd by (a) *Socodover*, it was my hap to see a Gentleman mounted on a Mule, to crosse the way, going (as it should seem) to the Court, handsomly clad. His breeches were of Murry Velvet, cut with somewhat a long, but delicate fine cut, drawn out upon cloath of Silver; his Doublet of Cloth of Gold, upon which he had a Buff Ierkin, layd on with costly Milan lace, some three fingers broad. He had a brave Hat answerable to the rest, imbroydered about the brims, and well set forth with its Feather, and was not a little graced by the Hat-band, which was set thick with gold Buttons inammelled with black.

This Gentleman rode \* *en cuerpo*, in his Hose & Doublet; But in his *Port. Manteau* he had a cloak, which (if I be not deceived) was of Rash, or else of fine Cloath, of like colour of his Hose, rounded about with a broad Parchment Gold lace, suitable to that of his Ierkin. These good cloaths of his set an edge on my appetite. And seeing I had not got my mony by Thrashing, but came by it so easily, it began to laugh and tighie in my Purse, it geered and fleered, and (like a little young Devil) went gingle, gingle, gingle.

(1) Socodover is  
the great  
Market  
place in  
Toledo.

\* A man is  
said to be  
*en cuerpo*,  
when he  
goes with-  
out a cloak,  
being in his  
bare Hose  
and Doublet.  
Guz-  
mans vain  
and idle  
humour.



# The Life of Guzman

When I saw my Purse was set upon this merry Pin, I could hold no longer for my heart, but brake presently with him, and told him in good earnest, if you have a mind to dance, I shall not stick to pipe unto you. Hereupon I went forth-with to a Merchants shop, bought all things fitting, called a Taylor unto me, and caused him to cut out my clothes. It was finished in a trice, before any words were made of it: In three dayes he brought it me home, and put it on my back, being just the same with the other, and as like as like could be, all save the Buff-jerkin, which, because I could not meet with a good one according to my mind, I made me one of Murrey Sattin, trimmed with trensils of Gold. My Garters were of straw colour, fringed about with Gold-Lace, and purled with spangles; So that now I did scarce know my self, I was grown so fine on the sudden: All was in very good order, and my self not a little proud of it.

Now I had no more to do, but to set a good face on the matter; & to say the truth. for a good face, when I was a boy, there were few that had a better. For I was very well-favour'd, my eye quick, and my countenance throughout very pleasing. When I saw what a gallant Soldier I was grown, I did proudly jet it about the streets of *Toledo*, in a very good Equipage, as if I had been the son of some principal man of note. I likewise entertained to attend on my person, a pretty handsome Page, and well clad; and I fell into acquaintance with one that was well skill'd in the fashions of that Country, and spake excellent language.

I conceited then with my self, that my Father was alive again, and that I was restored to those prosperous times wherein I was born : I thought my self the happiest man in the world, and took some delight in my gay clothes, that a nights I was loath to put them off, and a dayes I left no street untrodden, to the end that all might see me ; though I would not that any should know me. I got me up betimes on Sunday morning, put on a proud and stately gate, and in all this my gallantry, stept me with a jolly presence into the Cathedral Church for to hear Mass, though (let me whisper it in your ear) I went thither not so much to hear, as to be seen. I walk'd round about the Church some three or four times at least ; I visited the Chapels, ( which were most resorted unto ) till at last I came between the two Quires, where I staid : There I saw many Ladies and Gentlewomen, and a great many of Gallants. But I did strut and set forth my self, as if I had been the onely Cock of the Game, and all the rest Cravens ; none of their combs nor feathers were so goodly (me thought) as mine own, I did put them down all for a brave suit of clothes. And like a bonny Shepherd, made show of all the whole fleece, as one that was very willing, that they should take a general survey both of my person, and Apparel, not debarring their eyes of those lesser objects, as my girdle, garters, and shoe-ties, which were all *del Indesco*, curious and delicate work, right *Flanders*.

*The Sp. ni-  
a d bath  
naturally a  
proud kind  
of gate.*

I stretcht forth my neck, bore out my brest, stood stiff upon my legs, advancing one while this, and then that other foot ; carrying my self

self in that vain and idle fashion, that every one at last had found me out, and observing the strangeness of my looks, my Mimick gestures, and often change of postures, they began to jest and scoff at my folly. But as long as they lookt upon me, I ne're lookt into that; nor did I so much as once perceive, that my faults were the strings whereon their laughter plaid. But I rather thought with my self, that they did admire my curiosity, and my gallantry.

And this is all that offers it self to be spoken of concerning the Men. But a pretty accident hapned unto me amongst the Women, not unworthy such fools as my self; and this it was, Two, amongst the rest, were present there at that time, one of the which (being born in that City, and of extraordinary beauty) fixed her eyes upon my person, or (to speak more truly) upon my purse; perswading her self, that I that had such good clothes, could not choose but have good store of money. But for the present, I took no notice of that, nor did I care to cast an eye towards her, because I had swallowed the others bait, that sate on the other side; who having made (as children use to do) some signs unto her with my finger, smil'd upon me, and cast a kind of sly look towards me. I thought that was enough, I persevered in my ignorance, and she in her cunning carriage, till that going out of the Church, she went home to her house, and I after her walking leisurely along. I ventur'd upon her, and falling into discourse with her, vented some of my fooleries: but she answered me not a word: yet for all this she did not stick now and then to turn her  
head

head aside towards me, and to discover her face unto me, which was the fire that did burn me alive. At last we came to a street, near unto the *Solana* of S. *Cyprian*, where she dwelt. And as she entred into her house, it seemed (stooping to go in) that she made me a kind of reverence and courtesie with her head; and me thought her eyes laughed as it were upon me, and her countenance shew'd it self very chearful. With this (for this time) I left her, and returned back to my lodging the same way I came. But I had not gone many steps, but it was my hap to spy a young Wench that had taken up her standing at the corner of the street, who had wrap'd her self up so close in her Mantle, that you could scarce perceive the eys of her. This Wench had dog'd me, & putting only forth those her two lesser fingers of her fair hand, with them and her head, she call'd and beckned me unto her. I came unto her, to know what she would be pleased to command me. Who made a long discourse unto me, telling me that she was servant to such a married Gentlewoman, a woman of very good fashion, and very good quality, to whom I was much obliged, and could not out of noblenesse, but think my self much bound unto her, for the extraordinary love which she bare unto me.

And therefore, as well in regard of this her good affection towards my self, as also in respect of her own condition, (being so great and so worthy) and the strength of her Alliance and Kinred, which were men of no mean power and estimation in those parts; that I would be pleased to acquaint her where I lodged, because

*The cunning of your Spanish women.*

cause she had some earnest businessse to treat with me, and must needs speak with me, for it did much concern her so to do. I was so taken with this, that I had much ado (as they say) to keep my self from leaping out of mine own skin; nor would I have chang'd this good fortune of mine, with the best that ever befell *Alexander the Great*: Smoothing and flattering my self with this vain conceit, That all the Ladies and Gentlewomen in the Town were fallen in love with me, and now began to strive who should enjoy me first.

To this her message, I returned a very grave and demure answer, with a gratefull acknowledgment of this her offer'd, though undeserv'd, favor, which when she shall be pleased to make me worthy thereof, I shall think my self not only the most graced, but the most fortunate and happiest man in the world. In this conversation by little and little, we draw near to my Lodging. She took notice of it, and leave being taken each of other, I get me in to dinner, for it was more than time.

Now for that I knew not what this Gentlewoman was, and had never seen her heretofore (to my knowledge) my longing was not so great to look after her, as was my desire to see this other. I thought every hour a thousand years, till I might come to see her again; Time (me thought) was too slow of wing, his Glass did not run fast enough, his Sithe did not sweep away the loytering hours half so speedily as I could have wished. Yet at last I hie me to the street where she dwelt, bestowing there more turns, and circling more rounds about her house

than

than a Mill-horse, or a Mule that drawes in an  
 (a) *Aneria*; yet at last, when it grew some-  
 what late, and the day shut up, she came forth  
 (as by stealth) to talk with me from her win-  
 dow. Then did we enter discourse, and ex-  
 chang'd many words; at last she told me, that  
 I must needs that night come and sup with her.  
 I commanded my servant to provide me a good  
 fat Capon, a brace of Partridge, a baked Co-  
 nie, a bottle of the wine (b) *del Santo*, and as  
 good bread as could be got for money, fruits,  
 and other the like things for the latter course,  
 and that he should make hast and bring them  
 away with him.

(a) *Ano-  
ria*, i. an  
Engine  
that goes  
with  
wheels, to  
draw wa-  
ter out of a  
well.

(b) *Vino  
del Santo*,  
a rich kind  
of wine, as  
famous a-  
bout Tole-  
do, as that  
of Ayon  
Nantuell  
in France.

After that the night was well in, thinking it  
 was now high time, I went to the place ap-  
 pointed, where I was kindly received, and  
 entertained with all the kindnesse and courte-  
 sie that could be devised. It was now a fit  
 hour for supper, and therefore intreated her,  
 that she would command the Table to be cov-  
 ered. But she finding out fesh matter to work  
 upon, and spending the time in new entertain-  
 ments, spun out the thred still longer & longer,  
 adding one delay to another; I marvel'd a God  
 what she meant by it. I knew not in the world  
 what to make of it. At last, whilst I was musing  
 upon it, she puts me in a Labyrinth, beginning to  
 tell me that she was a Virgin, her descent Noble,  
 her condition and quality of those of the best  
 rank, & that she had a brother, an unruly young  
 Fellow, ill-govern'd, and worse condition'd,  
 subject to swaggering, and to quarrelling, a  
 kind of roaring boy, one that never came with-  
 in doors, unlesse it were sometimes to his din-

ner or his Supper, and all the rest both day and night, he spent in play, and other youthful pleasures.

Whilst we were in this deep discourse, behold one knocks aloud at the door. She cries out; Aye me! What shall I do? I am undone, I am undone. So much was she moved, so distractedly troubled with this feigned perturbation, so good a face did she set upon this falsehood, and did dissemble this her passion so handsomly, that she might therewith have deceived a wiser, and more experienced man than my self. And though this Gentlewoman knew very well both the end and the means, whereby all this businesse was to be carryed, yet did she play her part so well, that she seemed to be mightily afflicted, as one that knew not which way to turn her self. And as if then presently that remedy had occur'd unto her, (as a thing suddenly thought upon) she desired me of all loves to put my self for a while in-

(a) *Tinaja*, a large wide vessel of earthenware, as big as a Tun.

a (a) *Tinaja* that had no water in it, yet was it not without some droppings, and a kind of sliminess hanging about the sides of it, and that none of the cleanest. This earthen Vessel stood in the outward Court under the Porch. I got in as well as I could, as willing to doe what she would have me; she claps a lid over it, and when she had so done she returns to her *Estrada*, she was scarce set, but her brother comes in; who seeing such a great smoak in the house, said unto her; why now Sister, what mean you by this? are you turn'd Gallant, and think to out-brave me with this smoak? It is marvel you do not let the

the rain drip in to drive me hence. What have we to Supper ? so much smoke must promise much good cheer. It is not, I trow, a great deal of fire ( as they say ) and a little roast,

And as he went thus talking along, he entered into the Kitchen; where he had no sooner seen our provision, but he gets him out again, saying, here is brave doings indeed, it is news to see this, Sister. Which of us two, I pray, is to be married this night ? How came this hither into the house, and when ? What curious banquet is this ? or who the guests that are invited unto it ? Is this the confidence I have had of you ? Is this the honour which I maintain ? And this the reputation that you give to your Fathers house, and to me your unfortunate brother ? I must know the truth of this businesse, or else it is like to be a black night. She excused her self unto him, but how, or which way, I cannot tell you ; for partly through fear, and partly because the *Tinaja* was covered, I could not well either hear or understand more than the noise which her words sent forth. And in this cholerick humour of his, being much offended with her, he willed her to sit down at boord. And when they had supd, he in his own person went down with a Candle, and fell to searching of the house, and had made fast the door that opened out into the Street ; and they two entring together into their private chambers, remained there within, and I without in the *Tinaja*. All this while I was very attentive to whatsoever was laid or done, and earnestly betook my self to my devotions, insomuch, that there was not any



not any one prayer that I had learned all my life time that I did not run over and over, that God might blind his eyes, that he might not see where I was.

And finding my self out of danger, lifting up the cover, I thrust out my head a little to see whether my Mistressse were coming, or that I could either hear her cough or spet, whether any Cat were stirring about the house, or any thing else whatsoever. Every thing that mov'd, my mind still gave me that it should be she. But seeing that she staid so long away, and that the house was wonderful quiet, I leapt out of the belly of my *Tinaja*, like another *Jonas* out of the Whales, though not so clean as I could wish.

But it was my good hap, that for fear of such mischances which are wont to happen, especially to young men, I had reserved my better clothes for the day, making use a nights of that old Suit which I had bought before, so that the care I took was not great, and it did so much the lesse grieve me. I ranged round about the house, and went from lodging to lodging, till I came at last to her Chamber, where I began with my finger to scratch the door, like a Dog, and did the like upon the floor, and all that she might hear me, but this deaf Adder was of that evil condition, that she had stop't her ears.

In this kind of language the night wore away, and the day began to appear; which when I perceived, enraged, afflicted, desperate, and ready to freeze for cold, opening the street door, and pulling it after me, I went forth

forth (like a fool as I was) cursing and blaspheming, fretting and fuming, & making crosses on the wall, with a purpose never to come there any more.

Musing upon my mis-fortunes, I drew near to mine own lodging, finding not far from thence a Cooks shop open, where I filled my belly with Pies, and with them that rage and wrathfull choler descended down into my stomach, which stuck before in my throat, and was ready to choak me. My lodging was near at hand, I called for my servant, who (waiting there for me) opened the Door; I came in, put off my cloaths, and got me to bed. But the remembrance of the wrong that I had received would not suffer me to sleep, or to take my rest. One while I condemn'd my self, another while my Mistresse, and by fits would lay the blame upon my own ill fortune.

And while I was debating these things with my self, it being now broad day, behold one knocks at my Chamber door, and it was the Maid that had dogg'd me the day before, & her Mistress with her, who was no sooner come in, but she sets her self down in a chair, close by the bed-side, & her servant that waited on her sate upon the ground near unto the door, The Gentlewoman askt me a long story of my life; Who I was? What my businesse? And how long I staid in Town? but the Devil a word of truth that she could get from my mouth; and thinking to deceive her, she caught me in the trap. I fell short in that part of my account, which concerned me most: For whereas I should have said, That I was so reside there some cer-

tain

*This is an  
ordinary  
fashion in  
Spain.*

tain months. I told her that I past as a Tavellet, and was shortly to be gone. She, that she might not lose the advantage of the Dice, and to shew what a poor gamester I was in seeking after such a transitory sport, that was so last to little a while, ( but a cast and away ) made a sure account, if I would but set out her hand lively, to put a trick upon me. And thereupon she presently began to pitch the Hay, wherewith she meant to catch the Coney.

Thus resolved, she carelessly, (or rather with a great deal of carelesse care) went discovering her bravery in her cloaths, which was neat and delicate, with rich habiliments of Gold, with other things under her gown, which was of Naples Grogoram, choicer Silk all *Italy* was not able to afford.

And taking out certain Beads of Corall out of her pocket, she made shew of playing with them in her hand, tossing them to and fro; and within a little while after, she feigned that she mist a Relick, which was fastned thereunto. She seemed, to be much afflicted for the losse of it, saying, that it was her husbands. And therewithall she suddenly rose up, as if it did import her to go back again presently to her own house, that she might lose no time for the finding of it again, if by chance she had there let it fall, and albeit I promised to give her such another, and perswaded her all that I could, and made large offers, I could not win her to stay any longer.

Away she went, yet passing her word unto me, that she would come again to visit me, and send her Maid back again unto me, as soon as she

she  
her  
and  
fash  
velou  
derfu  
and  
not  
man  
there  
of th  
By  
came  
her  
Wer  
was  
once  
Mist  
hand  
wer  
have  
be f  
V  
men  
grie  
as f  
Th  
the  
gin  
the  
fail  
tim  
lou  
ou  
fit

she came home, to advise me, if she had found her lost Jewell. It made me very melancholy, and griev'd me much that she should in that fashion go away from me; for that she was marvelous beautiful, exceeding gallant, & wonderfull discreet. I had a great mind to sleep, and settled my self to take some rest, but I could not continue it for above two hours. I had too many cares in my head to take any ease, and therefore I rose that I might think the better of them when I was up.

By that time I had made my self ready, dinner came in, & while I was yet sitting at the Table, her Maid entred the room; Who (being a witty Wench as she was) entertain'd me till dinner was ended. And then she told me, that she was once more come back again to see, whether her Mistris, playing there with her *Rosario* in her hand, had by chance let fall that peece? We were alldown upon our knees, to see if we could have the good luck to find it; but it could not be found, because it was never lost.

When we had given over looking, I complemented with her, and told her, that I did not grieve so much for the worth of the thing it self, as for her sake, whose it was.

Then did she figure forth unto me the bigness, the proportion, and the true fashion of it; obliging me with good words, to buy her such another; promising that her Mistresse should not faill to be with me the next day following betimes, making some fair excuse (the better to colour the businesse,) to go on pilgrimage to our Ladies Shrine, or some other the like Visi-

*Many love  
matches  
are made  
in Spain,  
under these  
holypreten-  
ces.*

Vpon this I went along with her to the Goldsmiths, & bought her a dainty fine little golden book, curiously wrought, which her Maid had made choice of, and it may be she had her direction from her Mistresse, as having had her sight of this pretty toy but lately before. Howsoever I am sure they went clean away with it, for I could never after see either Mistresse, or Maid.

Now was it about three in the afternoon, and I had not yet digested the bread that lay in my stomach; I was ready to dy out of a longing desire that I had to know the occasion, and to search out the true reason of the last nights passage, and whether it were a matter of earnest, or a trick put upon me? And so putting this affront out of mind, as if there had never been any such matter, I returned to my former walk: Where I found my Mistresse looking very heavily on the matter, her countenance was sad & melancholy, and making shew, as if she had staid there for me, she beckned unto me with her hand to come unto her, putting her forefinger upon her mouth, and casting her eye behind her, as (if she were afraid lest somebody should watch her) she drew neer unto the door, & whisper'd softly unto me, that I should go gently on afore to the great Church, and so I did. She takes her mantle and hastens after me, meeting both as it were at one instant between the two Quires, and she passing quite through them, went directly out of the Church into the *Calla de la Capineria*, the street where all your womens *Chapines* are sold; and smiling upon me, and intising me unto her, with a lovely cast of her

hereye, she seemed to wish me to follow her. I made after her; she entred into a Merchants shop, in the (b) *Alcana*, and I with her. There she gave me satisfaction, vowing with a thousand oaths that it was no fault of hers, and that she had no hand in that businesse. She fill'd my head with this wind: I believed her well-composed lies, she promised this next night to make me amends; and though she were sure to lose her life, she would not spare it, to give me content. She made me so plyable, that she might now work me like Wax. She bought something, which came to about some hundred and fifty Royals, and when she was to pay for it, she said unto the Mercer, what shall I pay you weekly till this debt be out? He answered, Mistresse, see ware, see money, I do not use to part with my wares at this price, nor do I sell upon trust. If you deliver me my money, you may carry away what you have bought, if not, I must intreat you to pardon me.

Then I told him, Sir, This Gentle-woman is disposed to jest with you, for she hath mony sufficient to satisfie for a greater matter than this, I am her Purse-bearer, and the Steward of her house. So taking some Crowns out of my pocket, for to shew the greatnesse the more, I freed my self from basenesse, and her from her debt: Apprehending then at that instant, that this was but a stratagem of hers, to be paid before hand, & that she might not be mockt withall, as it often befalleth many women; nor did I repent me of what I had done; it seeming unto me, that by my fair proceeding, I had bound her unto me.

H<sub>2</sub>

Not

b *Alcana*  
a known  
street in  
Toledo  
where the  
Mercers  
dwell.

Nor would I have given my two employments of that one day, in the pursuit of these two Dames, for all the wealth of *Mexico*, and *Pern*. So I askt her whether she would keep true touch with me or no? And whether I might take sure hold of her promise? And at what hour I should come? She assured me that I might, and for the hour, she would not fail me at ten in the night. She went home to her house, and I to entertain the time abroad; Thinking with my self, that I had seized on two preys at one sight, and took two Trouts at one stroke.

At the hour appointed, I put on my old disguise, and got me to the Mill again. I gave the sign agreed upon between us, which was, to strike certain strokes with a stone underneath her window. But it was all one, as if I had bestowed those blows upon the Bridge of *Alcantra*.

I conceived with my self, that the hour was not yet come, or, that it was little more than ten of the clock, which made me dance attendance a little longer. And so hour after hour, I stood waiting there, till it was twelve of the night, now and then making the wonted signs.

But what should a man spend his time in talking? It was but lost labour, a wearying out of my self in vain, and a meer mockery. For he whom she termed her brother, was her Gallant, and her Sweet-heart, and did maintain themselves by these kind of cheating tricks, and consorting both together in all that they did.

They were of *Cordova*, proper in their persons,

persons, and well accommodated; amongst other young Thrushes, that they had brought into the Net, was a young Scrivener, but newly married, who being whetted on by this Gentlewoman, and tolled on by such trains as shee had cunningly laid for him, had given her certain Jewels; and as shee dealt with me, so did she lead him along with delays, making him to wait upon her pleasure, putting him to fine after fine to purchase his desire. But when he found all was coozenage and roguery, he resolved to be revenged on her.

That night I was quite tired out with a tedious expectation, (as you have already heard,) And when I was about to go my way, lo, I might discern a great troop of people making towards me, and supposing it to be the Justice, I got me a little aside. At last I perceived, that they knockt at that door; I returned back, drawing nearer and nearer, a little and a little, to see what all this company did seek for. And one of the *Alguazils* (telling them within who they were) caused the door to be opened. When they were all gone in, I got me to the door, that I might the better understand how all things passed. The *Alguazil* searched all the house over and over, but could not find that which he came for. I was about to call unto them, to look into the *Tinaja*, and to have betook me to my heels when I had done. But the Scrivener presently took that task upon him, and saved me a labour, and had a care that no corner should be left unsearcht.



One by chance lighted upon a single hand-cuff that lay upon the ground, one of the *Alguazils* said, this cuff must have a master, who ever it be.

The Gentlewoman would fain have salv'd up this matter : but having prickt the Hare, those Hounds began to take a little more pains, and to hunt with more metal, in hope to have their game. And one of the *Alguazils*, seeing a great Coffer there, which (as he thought) might very well contain a man, commanded it to be opened; where they found my Gallant. Whereupon they were both will'd to put on their clothes, and to make themselves ready : which done, they were both for company carried to prison together. I was both contented therewith, and ashamed. Contented, that it was my good hap not to be found there ; and ashamed, that she had gull'd me, & made a fool of me. All the remainder of that night, I could not sleep one wink, for thinking partly of this, & partly on that other Gentlewoman, upon whom, I thought to make my self whole, I did conceit with my self, that she was a woman of an other kind of quality, and of a differing fashion from the former.

All that day I stood waiting for her, but she did not so much as send me any message by her maid, nor did I know where she liv'd, nor what she was. You see here how well I imploy'd my pains, and my purse upon these two. I was now grown desperate, and for my greater comfort amidst these my troubles, at night when I came to lodging, I met with an *Alguazil* there, a stranger, making inquiry for I know not what person. I will'd my ser-

want to tell him, that if he had any thing to say to me, he should be sure to find me there the next morning.

In the mean time I walked by the Gate *del Cambra*, where musing and walking, I continued almost till it was day, framing Discourses to my self, what, or whom it should be, that this *Alguazil* sought for. But when the morning was come, I thought it a safe hour to go home, with purpose to change both my apparell and my lodging.

But by this time my care was secur'd; for I was not he that he looked for, as I afterwards understood. I went forth to the place of *Sacedover*, where I heard 2. Mules cry'd for to go for *Almagro*, agreeing for them; that night I reached to *Orgaz*, the next to *Malagon*. But being not able, out of the fear I had taken those nights before, to take any rest, I came thither so drowzy, and so sleepy, that I was not able to hold up my head; But another new occasion did awaken me, and made me to rowze up my spirits; which was; That as soon as I was entred into my Lodging, there came to take charge of my clothes, and such other things as I brought in with me, a young Wench, seeming to be something more than a servant, and yet somewhat lesse than a daughter; She had a good face of her own, a handsome feature, a pleasant behaviour, and both wit and tongue at will. Which sort of creatures, (to draw both custome and credit to such kind of houses) your honest Inneholders will be sure to lay wait for, for seldom or never shall you see them unprovided of such pretty Commodities, to welcome,

*A Town in the Kingdom of Toledo. Guzman leaves Toledo.*

*A pleasant  
jest that  
past be-  
twixt*

*Guzman  
and a pret-  
ty wench at  
the Inne in  
Mclagon.*

and cheere up their Guests. I talk to her, and she answered me; I could not spur her that question, whereunto she did not kick me an answer. One discourse drew on another, and we continued our conversation so farr forth that she consented unto me, and had peremptorily given me her promise, that she would come and passe away the time with me, when her Master and Mistresse were gone to bed and asleep. Shee covered the boord; I gave her the brawn of the Capon; I drank a Health unto her, and she did pledge me; I would have held her fast by the arm; she flies off; I seeking to catch hold of her, and she to get away from me, reaching at her, I fell down upon the one side to the ground. The chair was of Wood, & had some turnd pieces in it likewise, it took me just athwart the midst of my body, where I received a shrewd blow. When I was up, and all was well, I put the question again unto her, whether I should depend upon her coming? She told me, I should see whether she meant to fail me or no? and so went her away.

You have heard how ill I past those nights before, which made me now so heavy-headed, that it was impossible that I should any longer bear up; and abstain from sleeping. But I was desirous to rise betimes, whether I slept or no. And therefore I will'd my servants, that they should get them straw & barley, so much as our Mules were to be allowed the next morning, and that they should bring it, and put it in the chamber where I lay. Which being done, having set it neer unto the door, they pull'd it after them

them, and leaving it unshut, they went to bed: And albeit sleep would fain have seized upon me, yet my desire kept me waking; but not being able to hold out any longer, I was forced to yeeld my self to the arrest of *Morphew* his Mace, with whose silken bands I was fast though softly bound.

About mid-night a little she-Asse had slipr her halter in the Stable, and got loose, and went about the house to seek her Provant; This Asse came to my lodging, and having smelt out the Barley, the little foole thrust in her head, thinking to have met with a good mouthful, & in pressing to come where the Provender was in the Sieve, she wagg'd, & wagg'd, this way and that way, and striving to get in, the door began to creak. I that was mindful of the business, a little thing would suffice to revive my remembrance: And now I was fully perswaded that it was she, and because I was all this while very sleepy, and scarce half awake, I imagined with my self, that she could not find the way to the bed, whereupon I raised my self, & sitting up in my bed, I called her unto me. When the Asse heard my voyce, she was afraid, and stood still, save only that she did Put one of her fore-feet in the fraile where the straw was. I thinking that it was the Wench, and that she had stumbled by chance upon it, leapt out of my bed, and said unto her, Come hither, my Love, come to bed, give me thy hand. And because she should reach me, I strecht out my body at large unto her, and lifting up my leg, I hit her with my knee on the snout, with that she lifted up her head; and

and smote me such a blow with hers on the noddle, that she almost set me on my breech, so much was I astonied therewith. And when she had done, she fled away from me, as fast as her legs would give her leave. I bled mainly, both at mouth and at nose; and cursing Love, and all his cunning tricks to the pit of Hell; I knew that this hapned deservedly unto me: because, being a wild simple Lad as I was, I was so easie of belief. But I quickly made fast my door and got me to bed.

I begun to swear, that I would never more follow *Cupid's* Colours, nor be of his Company. But I was asleep when I made this protestation, and knew not what I said. My sleepiness was so great then at that time, that all my pain could not keep me waking.

Which drowsinesse of mine was the cause, that I could not rise so early as I thought, but kept my bed till nine of the clock that morning. At which hour comes me in this my fiddle-faddle of the Inne, to give me satisfaction, vowing and swearing unto me, that she lay within her Master and Mistris, and that they had shut her up, and kept the key themselves, that she could by by no means get forth. Though for mine own part, I did verily believe, that she did purposely play the wag with me, and had never any such meaning, but did lye in all that she said. Whereupon I told her, O friend *Lucia*, your love hath done me a great deal of hurt: I shall look hereafter a little better to your water. Take me in that fault again, and I will give you leave to hang me. Go about your businesse, go, I have no more

to say to you. Make hast and bring in my breakfast, for I will presently be gon. So she tossed out of hand a brace of Partridges, served in with a slice or two of Bacon, which served both for our break-fast, and our dinner, because the day was farr spent, and our journey but short.

Well, I was now upon going, my Mules were ready, and stayd for my coming. The Mule that I rode on, was an ill-conditioned jade, and something skittish. When I was ready to put foot in the stirrop, my mule jerking out her hinder leggs, flings me out her heels, and doubling her files with two kicks that she made at me, she threw me a good ways from her: I recovered my self, got me up, & with a loud voice I began to cry out, there is not any female (I think) in this Inne, even to the very Mules, which hath not her jadish tricks.

Well, I was seated in my Saddle, and my Mule was quiet, and being upon the way, I acquainted my servants what had hapned unto me, with the Assie that came into my Chamber. They laught exceedingly, as if they would have burst their hearts, and the more, at my weak and Childish understanding, that I would give credit to a Wench in an Inn, who are never good but at their first comming, and ever after prove arrant jades, that a man cannot tell how to trust them.

Whilst we were thus discoursing on the way to passe away the time, and make our journey seem the easier, I lighted on a Traveller, of whom I learned, That in *Amagro*, I should meet with a company of Souldiers. Whereof

Guzman  
comes to  
Almagro.

I was wonderful glad. In my coming into the Town, I was no sooner entred, but I might perceive in the high street a Banner hanging out at a Window. I past along by it, and went to lodge at one of the Innes there in the Market-place, where I supt betimes, and got me quickly to bed, that I might recover some of my lost sleeps, and repair the wrongs of so many ill-passed nights, as I had lately endured.

Guzman  
takes on  
him a feigned  
name.

Mine Host, and those his Guests that he had in the house, seeing me come in so well accommodated, and so well waited on, made inquiry of my servants, who I was. And they (as not knowing any thing, but what they heard from my self) told them, that my name was *Don Juan de Guzman*: Sonne to a principal Gentleman of the house of *Toral*. On the morning very early my Page brought me my cloaths; I put them on, setting my self forth in all my bravest gallantry, and after that I had been abroad and heard Masse, I went to visit the Captain, telling him, that I was come in search of him, to tender my service unto him. He receiv'd me with a great deal of courtesie, and with a chearful look, which was no more than my respect unto him might challenge; besides, the good fashion that I came to him in, and the moneys which I brought along with me in my purse, (which were little lesse than a thousand *Royals*) might merit some respect; for the rest of the birds were flown, and like *Noahs* Crow, were never to return again; they were spent and gone in gay clothes, in courting of Wenches, and in

Guzman  
entertained  
by the  
Captain for  
a Souldier.

good

good fellowship upon the way. He admitted me into his own Squadron, made me sit and eat with him at his own Table, using me evermore with much love and kindnesse.

In requital whereof, I began to(\*) *Regular* (\*) *Regular*, is to afford a man all the delights and dainties that are to be had for love or money. The word is derived a Rege: that is, so much, that a King cannot desire more. \*A Spanish Proverb.

him, and to serve him, presenting him still with one thing or other; enlarging my hand like a Prince, as if I had for every \* Tuesday a new pair of ears; or were sure to meet (where-soever I came) with another Grocer, another River, and another Grove of Trees, wherein to hide my self. So fast did I spend my money without fear or wit, threw it away with so prodigal an hand, taking ames-Ace against seven, and denz-Ace against eleven; I did so often visit the Drum-head, that at last getting little, and losing much, I was almost quite blown up.

In these kind of entertainments did I consume my self, and my time, till we were to march away: And for to fill up the Company, we were all of us put into a Church, whence we came forth one by one, and when they came to call me, the Pay-Master look'd upon me, in whose eye I seemed somewhat too young; insomuch that he durst not inroll me amongst the rest, according to the instructions that were given him. Whereat I grew exceeding angry, that I had much adoe to contain my self, but was ready to have lasht out into some liberty of language; But I did quickly quench this flame, and said unto him, Sir, you that are my Pay-Master, my years (I confesse) are few, but my courage as great as any mans. It is the heart that commends, and this



this arm knows how to brandish a blade, there is blond and marrow enough in it, for to undertake great matters.

He answered me very gravely and wisely, it may be so, Sir, and I doe verily believe it, and with much more willingnesse than your self can speak it; but the order that I have given me in charge, is thus and thus, wherein if I should exceed my Commission, my Purse must soundly pay for it. No body shall smart for it but my self. I knew not what to reply to so fair an answer, though the blood that boyled in my brest, and the colour that shew'd it self in my cheeks, could not so easily be allaid. My Captain was very sensible of this affront of mine, and took it as tenderly as if the case had been his own.

For being quitted of my place, he was perswaded I should then presently forsake his company. And taking part with me against the Pay-master, he was somewhat round with him; insomuch that neither of them having the patience to bear one with another, they grew to high words, and much ado there was.

This storm was laid, the Sea had done roaring, their strife was ended, and the Company was fully made up. The Captain came to visit me at my Lodging; telling me in brave and gallant termes, how much this grief of mine did trouble him, and how sorry he was for my heavinesse; and with honourable both words and promises, he gave me that good satisfaction, that I rested very well contented.

Where:

Whereupon, albeit I was resolved to leave him, yet notwithstanding his words were so powerfull with me, that he stopt me in my course, and suddenly took me up, when I was in the heat and height of my carreer. A great deal of good talk we had together; And if it be not dangerous to speak the truth, we did murmur and mutiny at the small reckoning, and slight acknowledgment of Souldiers, and men of true worth and valour, and the base esteem that was made of military discipline and profession of Arms; But let it not trouble you Sir, that we are now to march hence, in *Italy*, you shall find another kind of world, and here I passe my word unto you, that I will make you an Ensign. Which albeit it be a meaner place than your merits may challenge, yet it may serve as a step to advance you higher. I gave him thanks for his friendly offer. The next day following, the Company marched away without any stay till they came to the Sea coast; (the Caprain spending liberally upon my Purse) We staid waiting there for the comming of the Gallies, three months almost spent, In which time, and that which was already past, my purse had pit his venome, and my rent began to fail me, My continuance at play did likewise put a helping hand to my speedier dispatch; so that I was now quit out of Cash, and all my money was gone; not all in one day, but all, at all these severall times. I was reduced back again to my former state, with a white Cudgell under mine arm. How much did I then relent my former follies? How angry was I grown with my self? What amendment did I propose unto

Guzmans  
money is  
all gone, &  
now begins  
he to la-  
ment his  
folly.

unto my self, now that I had not so much as one single penny left in my Purse? Who made me turn Gallant, without moderation? Who taught me to spend without goverment? To what end was I so free in my play, so frank in my lodgeing? & so prodigall with my Captain? I was ready to run besides my self, and was almost out of my little wits. I was no more esteemed, or respected of any. When my monyes fell short, all fell away from me: as long as I had that, I had them; that gone, they shuck hands with me, and bid me farewell. Thus by little and little, peece after peece, all my ornaments were taken off, and poor *Don Iuan de Guzman* was degraded.

Those that heretofore did honour, did visit, did entertain me, came to feast and banquet with me, the heart-strings of my Purse being broken, forsook me; not a man would talk or converse with me. My dealing and conversation was wholly now with the straggling Boys about the Camp, such as carried Wallets and Knap-sacks for the Souldiers, and on this had I now set up my rest.

How bitter was it unto me to begin? how troublesom to go on? how grievous to endure this new dis-adventure? But I had been well acquainted heretofore with these kinds of misfortunes, and had learned the long since to my great cost. And because these things were not new unto me, I presently fell to my work, and lively bestir'd my self about my business. But this one thing was my chief comfort, That in the time of my prosperity, I gained credit against

against the day of Adversity. And I did not count it my least riches, that I had left a stamp and impression in all mens minds, that I was of a noble and free disposition. My Captain made some reckoning of me, and was more willing than able to help me, For (poor man) he had scarce enough to serve his own turn.

I saw, that I was not able to live of my self, and therefore got to serve my Captain, making him now my Master, who but a little before was my Companion: And I waited on him with that care, as I did on the Cook. Howbeit, he commanded me with a kind of respect; And did thus assure himself of me, that I would not doe any thing unworthy a Gentleman, and unbecoming my Birth and Parentage, for any Interest in the world.

Guzman  
sets himself  
to serve his  
Captain.

He held me to be as faithfull, and as secret, as I was patient. He made me Treasurer of all his secrets. He manifested his necessities, and made known his wants unto me. I did much grieve at my Captains poverty, because I did not know how to remedy it. He had some Jewels left, which he might sell, if need were; but those were things to doe him honour.

While these Gallies were comming, we were faine to goe from one Town to another, to quarter our selves with the best conveniency wee could. By that confession, which my Master had made unto me, I understood his mind, and the end wherefore he did it.

I told him, Sir, I know by good experience, both good and bad fortune, prosperity and adversity, and wot well what they are.

In my yonger years I have traviled far and neer, & have seen somewhat of the world. I shall to the uttermost of my power expresse that loyalty and faithfulness which I owe unto my Master, and to the Stock whereof I come.

Take you, Sir, no care, assuring your self, that I will hazard my life in your service, and will so order the businesse (till better times shall befriend us) that for the present, you shall passe over the trouble you now are in, with a great deal more ease.

In every place where we were to lodge our Souldiers, I had gotten a dozen Billets, whereof the least afforded no lesse than twelve *Royals*, and some did contribute fifty. My entrance was free into all those houses, where nothing was safe from my hands, no not so much as the water that was in their Wells.

*Guzmans  
cunning  
while he  
serv'd the  
captain.*

I never suffered my Master to be without a Hen, a Chicken, a Capon, or a Pidgeon, both at Dinner and Supper, and a whole Gammon of Bacon every Sunday boyld in Wine.

If by chance the Master of the house should take me napping, if it were of small value, it was passed over as a thing of no thing, and accounted only a waggish trick; but if it were of any moment, my punishment was;

was, to be brought by my Master before him that had<sup>e</sup> complained of me, and causing my hands to be bound, with the thinn sole of a shooe he would give me my payment; which being of a hollow kinde of grain, it sounded loud, but did smart but little; the noise was more than the pain. Sometimes I should have the luck to get me Sureties, that should passe their word for me, that I should not do so any more, and then I was pardon'd. And because I knew, they were given me more for fashion sake, than any ill will; and rather to satisfie others, than to hurt me, before ever the blow came neer me, I would cry out, as if I had been kill'd; and set out such a throat, as if I would have rent the very walls of the house atunder.

Thus did my Master and I give good satisfaction; he, by complying with his obligation; and I, by supplying of his necessities: by killing first his hunger, and afterwards by giving life to his honour.

I would sometimes get me out into the High-ways, and seize upon all sorts of baggages; then would I seem to shew them favour, in selling them their own again; in-dearing to the owners of them, that it cost me thus and thus much out of mine owne purse, to get these their goods to be returned unto them, so that I had both mony, and thanks for my pains.

Thoe commodities which we lighted on in the Villages where we lay, those that were

able, might chance to see them again, and redeem them for their money; \* but those that had not wherewithall, their goods were invisible, not a rag to be seen: they that had taken them from them, were fled and gone, and no more news to be heard of them. At the Musters, when the Muster-master was to see if the Company were full, I would thrust in amongst the Souldiers five or six young Fellows of the Town, well appointed, and made them to passe. Sometimes I would so handle the matter, that putting one single man in the Church, up above in the Charnel house that is made for dead mens bones, five times one after another, I received five payes. And for him that was to come last, I would clap a plaister upon his nose, that he might not be known. And every severall time, I did change his clothes, because my knavery should not be found out, and my trick discovered.

With these Gigs, and others the like gulleries, mine own person was as good as fourmens payes. My Master lov'd me as his life for these good services that I did him; but he was a great spender, and therefore both this, and all besides that I could doe for him, was all too little.

When we were come to \* *Bercelona*, and ready to imbarke our selves in the Gallies, I found my Master much troubled, as being in a great straight, for that he had received no pay from the King, and how to procure monies, he knew no way in the world; nor could mine

*The chief  
city in Ca-  
talunna.*

mine that I brought him in, stead him to any purpose. I saw he was melancholy, sad, and heavy: I knew streight what disease he was sick of, as being the Physitian, that had often cured him therof hertofore. I offered him to apply a sudden remedy for his sore. He had with him divers Jewels, I knew not well what my self, and amongst the rest an (a) *Agnus Dei* of gold, a very rich one: it grieved him to part with it, but I told him; Sir, if you dare to trust me, put this *Agnus Dei* into my hands, and I will promise you to return it again unto you within these two days, much improved, and make it better worth unto you, then now it is. He was glad to hear me say so; and jestingly said unto me; What trick have you now in store *Guzmannillo*? Hast thou lighted peradventure (as thou wast wont) upon some new roguish plot, some feat villanie or other, and canst come finely off with it? Now because he knew, that he might trust his profit, with my sufficiency, his honour with my seccie, and that his Jewell was sure enough, without farther questioning me, what I would do with it, he gave it me, telling me withall, God grant you bring it safe back again, and that my wishes may take good successe.

Lo, there it is, take it, and do what thou wilt with it. I took it of him, put it in my bosome, lapt it safe in a little Purse, knit it fast, and tyed it sure to one of the button holes of my Doublet. With it I went directly to a Goldsmiths shop; one that was a rich man and a great Vsurer; I made a large relation unto

a Agnes  
Dei, is  
Christ our  
redeemer,  
called a  
Lamb.



unto him of my person, and how and by what means I came to this Company, and what a deal of money I had spent in a short time, reserving (when I should see my self in some need) a very rich Jewell, for the supplying of my wants: And that if he would buy it of me, he should have it reasonable cheap, so as he did not offer me too little, & too much undervalue the worth of it. But withall, I advised him, that he should first inform himself of my person, and of my quality, who, and whence I was; and in knowing of it, (without rendring any reason why he was so inquisitive, taking that for a sufficient satisfaction to himself) he should walk forth and meet me at the Sea-side, for there I would stay for him, and there he should find me all alone, wishing him to make as much hast as he could.

This man who had a great mind to this Peece, & was greedy of gain, inform'd himself of me from the Captain, the Officers, and some other of the Souldiers; receiuing so much satisfaction, as was sufficient to content him. For they did all of them witnesse one and the same thing; That I was the Son of a principall *Cavallero*, rich and nobly descended, and that being desirous to see *Italy*, I came to their company with a couple of servants attending on me well clad, & with good store of Crowns in my purse; that I had spent it all (as young men use to do) which was the cause, that I was now in that poor case, as himself might well see:

All this made as well for me, as my self could

could wish it ; it fell out pat , as I would have it. My honest Usurer told me what they said , that he was very well satisfied therewith, & that he might safely deal with me for any thing that I might sell him. He desired my Jewell of me, that he might look upon it , and that he would give me as much for it , as it was worth. I told him that we would go aside by our selves into some secret place , and there he should have a sight of it.

We went a pretty way off , and when we had found out a fit place to my mind , I put my hand into my bosome , and took out my *Agnus Dei* , of whose price I was well informed , as one that knew what it cost. The Gold-smith lik'd it well , and had a great desire to buy it. For , besides that the gold-work was very well wrought and curiously enameled , it had diverse stones in it of great value. I demanded of him for it two hundred Crowns , which was little lesse then the price that was paid for it when it was first bought. He began to turn and wind it this way and that way , holding it one while upward , another downward , to see which way it shew'd it self best , and gave the brightest lustre.

He found a hundred faults in it ( only to bring down the price ) offering me a thousand Royals at the first word. I was resolved that he should not have it under a hundred and fifty Crowns , and it was as well worth that , as one Royall ; and under that I would not part with it. I offer , and he bids ; At last my cunning Merchant comes up to an hundred and twenty

twenty Crowns; I thought with my self I should never draw him higher, and that is was enough (if not too much) for that which I pretended; & for so much I sold it him. He was loth to leave me till he had paid me; and would faine have had me to have gon with him: but I told him, Honest Sir, God blisse your life, and send you well to do; if I should go hence alone with you, I am afraid, lest that money would be taken from me, which I purpose to keep till I come to *Italy*, to furnish me with clothes, that I may come in some good fashion, when I make my self known there to my Kinsmen and friends.

And if some Souldiers or other should hap to see me go with you, they would presently suspect, that it is rather to sell, than buy any thing of you. And if they should perceive that I have any store of Copper or Silver money about me (being but a Boy as I am) they will take it from me, and I shall have no remedy against them. And therefore God be your good speed, go your ways, I will stay for you here till you come, bring your gold with you, so many Crownes, as we have agreed upon, and you shall have the Jewel away with you, and God send you as good luck with it as I shall wish you.

He well approv'd my reason, and hastned home (like a young Colt in his full gallop) for to fetch them. I had given notice to a companion of mine, (a confident servant of my Masters) that he should stay there waiting for me; and when I had given such a sign he should as

secretly

cretly as he could hast in unto me. He lay close in ambush; The Gold-smith by this time is come, he counts me out my Crowns in the palm of my hand: I had the Jewell in my purse, I sought to untie it: but because the knots were knit so fast, I could not so easily do it. My Usuring Merchant had hanging at his girdle a pair of knives in an old greasie sheath; I desired him that he would lend me one of them. He (not knowing why I borrow'd it) puls me out his knife and gives it me. I cut the string asunder, leaving the knot fast knit to my Doublet as it was before, and I gave it into his hand with the *Agnus Dei*. The man began to marvel; and askt me why I did so, and wherefore I had put it there? I told him, that because I had never a box, nor no Paper to lap it up in, I had done as I did, and the matter was not great, for the Purse was old and little worth, and I had no great need of it, and as for these Crowns that I had of him, I should make a shift to sew them up in some ragg or other about my clothes, where no body should come unto them.

He took the Jewell of me, just in the same manner as I had given it him, and after that he had put it in his bosome, we took our leave, and he went his way. I gave the sign to my Companion: he comes; I gave him the Crowns, and advised him that he should hie him home with them, and give them to my Master, and tell him, that I would be with him by and by.

That done, I made after my Gold-smith,  
and

and though by reason of his large strides, he had the advantage of me, and got ground of me, yet I ran after him, till the occasion I expected, did fairly offer it self unto me. And so watching my time, when he was jump even with a company of Souldiers, that were standing together, I took fast hold of him with both hands, crying out, A thief, a thief, help honest Souldiers, for Gods sake come in and help me, for the Rogue hath robb'd me, hold him fast if you love me, let him not go, take (and you be good men) ô take, take quickly the Jewell from him, for my Master will kill me, if I come home without it, and this Villain hath violently taken it from me.

I was well known to all Souldiers, and as soon as they heard me, and saw the pitifull moan that I made, they believed I said truth, Hereupon they laid hold on the man, to know what the matter was. And because he that complains first, the Justice commonly goes on his side; and that whining and crying out of wrongs received, many times overcome the right, more by clamour than any good claim that they could make; I cry'd out more and more, and kept such a stirre, and such a noise, that I would not suffer him to speak, and if he did, then I was so loud again, and so clamorous that they could not hear him; putting this trick upon him in the playing of my game. I did implore this help with great exclamation, with my hands linked one within another, and lifted up to heaven, and with my knees, creeping

creeping and crawling on the ground, crying out unto them, As yee be Gentlemen, good my Masters, take pity and compassion of me; for the Captain, my Master, will surely kill me. This tribulation of mine did much trouble them, it did grieve them to see me in this pityfull plight.

At last, they began to ask me what the matter was? and how and wherein I had been wronged? Nor was I herein wanting to play my part, now I had the hand of him, I would be sure to hold it; gracing my lye with all the credit I could, that I might leave the lesse room for his truth to enter.

Having this string to my bow, (letting a good face on the matter) I up, and told them; This morning, my Master left his *Agnus Dei* at his beds head upon his pillow; he willed me to keep it, and look safe unto it; I took it, and first put it into my purse, and then in my bosome, (thinking I had made all sure enough) but meeting with this good man (you here see) by the Sea-side, I puled it forth to shew it him; and because he was a Gold-smith, I askt him what it might be worth: He told me, that the body of the Jewell was but Copper double-gilt, and that the stones were counterfeit, no better than Glasse. Yet asked me withall, whether I would sell it? I told him no; it was my Masters. He demanded then of me, if my Master would sell it? My answer was, Sir I know not: you were best ask him, for he can best tell you. After this, he proceeded further in talk with me, asking me, who I was, whence

whence I came, and whither I would; and so held me in such idle discourse till we were both alone, out of sight of any; and drawing a knife out of that sheath of his that hangs there at his girdle, he willed me to make no words, for if I did but offer to squeak, though ne're so little, or but wag a foot from that place, there was no way but one with me, he would presently cut my throat, I stood shaking and quivering, while he was taking the Jewell out of my bosome, and because he could not readily untie the knots, I had knit them so fast, he made no more adoe, but cut the string asunder, and so went away with it; And I think he hath it still about him; search him I beseech you (good honest Souldiers) for Gods sake search him.

The Souldiers seeing that the Purse was cut indeed, turn'd towards my Gold-smith, and lookd somewhat strangely upon him, who was strook therewith so dead, that he had not a word to say for himself. They took the *Agnus Dei* out of his bosome, which he had carried away in his Purse; as I had before informed them, so did they just find it about him.

Thendid he begin to fall a cursing, and swearing, vowing by no small oaths that I had sold it unto him, and that I with my own hands, with that very knife, cut the purse my self, and afterwards delivered it unto him, and that I had of him for it, a hundred an twenty Crowns in very good gold. But for all his swearing and staring, they would never a whit

whit the sooner beleewe him; Thinking in good discreion, that it was not likely, that he would venture to buy any such peece of me, for he might very well think that it was stoln Ware. Besides (which made much for me) they had searched me all over, from top to toe, but could not find one penny of money about me.

Making this to serve as a strong proof against him, they us'd him very homely, both in words and deeds. And whatsoever he said unto them to justifie himself, it was all one, he had been as good to have held his tongue, for after that, they would neither beleewe, nor hear him. They had forcibly taken the Jewell from him; He complains thereof unto the justice; I was brought before him; there I opened the case anew (as before you have heard) not failing so much as one syllable in the relating of that, which I had formerly delivered.

The Witnesses were sworn, and justified both what they had seen and heard. And in the end, the businesse was brought so about that it was concluded, the Gold-smith should be severely punished. But upon intreaty, he had a brotherly correction, and so sent packing. And as for me, I had my Jewell given me in the open Court, with charge to carry it home to my Master. I went with it into his lodging, there in the presence of all his people, I deliverd it unto him. What I had done did nothing displease my Master. At that time he lik'd it well, yet it troubled him somewhat, and he could not well tell what to think of it.

Thes



These tricks of mine did him good service; but he was afraid both of them and me.

With these kind of Cordials, I kept my Master in heart, till he came to *Genoa*; where, (having dis-imbarkt) and having now but little need of my service, he shifted me off.

Some few days after our arrivall, my Master call'd me aside; and said unto me; Youth, you are now in *Italis*, your service will be of little use to me, and your Rogueries may do me much wrong: Here is somewhat for you to help you on your journey, dispatch quickly, and be gone, for you have free liberty to go whither you will. He gave me some moneys of small value, and some few Spanish *Royals*; all was a matter of nothing, scarce worth God-a mercy; and with this poor bit-rance, I took my leave of him and left him.

Now seeing in what disgrace I was, and hoping to find out my kindred there, I made the lesse reckoning of it. So I went dayly up and down the City, seeking by that meansto learn the language, which as yet I neither understood, nor knew, out of the desire that I had to know & to be known.

---

but

Ma-  
ere,  
tule

my  
ne;  
rice  
ries  
hat  
etch  
erty  
ome  
nish  
rice  
bit-  
left

ho-  
the  
and  
arn

HE



R

F

TH

—

—

G



wou  
(a)  
ally  
ving  
such

THE  
**ROGUE,**  
 OR THE  
**FIRST PART**  
 OF  
**The Life of GUSMAN**  
 de ALFARACHE.

*The third Book.*

C A P. I.

GUSMANS *Beggerly scarse of life, and what happened to him in Italy.*



S soon as I had left the Captain my Master, having made of all my tatter'd rags, and other old clouts, a kind of scar-Crow (for they would scarce serve for any other use) to fray away birds from the Fig-trees, I

(a) *The etimologie of this word Go-do, or Goth is diverse, & comes of Gathia, a Province so called.*

would needs boast my self to be descended of the (a) *Gothes*; an ancient Gentleman, and neerly ally'd to most of the Nobility of that City, giving out, that I was such a one; and come out of such a House; and making farther enquiry of

A a my

# The Life of Guzman

my Fathers ancient Family, and his great Alliance in that City, it caused such distastfulness, and such loathing in them towards me, that they did hate me to the death. There was not that man to whom I made my self known, that did not relieve me with a box on the ear, a flirt on the lips, a kick on the breech; and he that did least hurt or disgrace me, did not stick to spit in my face, upbraiding me with the name of villain Rogue, Moor, and the like. Art thou a *Genoes*? Thou art the Son of some vild lewd woman, no better can be conceived of thee. And as if my Father had been a mis-begotten Bastard, or as if he had been dead some two hundred years ago, I could not find so much as a foot-step of any friend or kinsman of his. Nor could I discover any thing, till one came unto me, and greeting me with a Serpents tail, like a crafty old scab, (O that accursed old Villain, that son of a Whore, O how did he cozen me!) closing fairly with me, up and told me,

*A notable  
pleasant  
trick put  
upon Guzman  
by a  
Genoes.*

I have heard much talk (my Boy) of your Father, and I can bring you acquainted with those that shall render you a large relation of your Parents, and those none of the meanest; but (if I be not deceived) even the best and noblest in all the City.

And because I suppose ye have supt already, come and take a bed with me at my house, (for now the time is fit for nothing else) and to morrow morning we will walk a turn or two about the Town, and I shall bring you to those (as I told you) that knew him very well, and had long conversed with him. The good presence that he carried, the gravity wherewith he uttered

red

red his words, his good proportion of body, his decent attire, his bald-head, his white Beard, which reached almost down to his Girdle, and the Staff which he bare in his hand, represented (me thought) unto me another *Saint Paul*. I trusted my self with him, I followed him to his house, with a great deal more desire to sup, than to sleep: for that day I had made but a bad dinner, as well for that I had been chafte and angry; as also that it must have been at mine own cost, which made me to quake, as oft as I did but think upon spending but a farthing.

But because that which the rich gives us is but little, and what we call for must cost us mony, we eat but little bread, and that (God knows) stale and hard; though to us, that are almost hunger-starv'd, it seems a great deal and soft enough. Besides, I was now grown a pinch-belly, and a very miser to my self.

I went along, but with feeble legges, ready to faint for hunger, after that I saw what an Host I was like to have, having told me by way of prevention, that I had already sup't: Had it not been out of the fear that I had to lose so fair an opportunity, I would not have gone with him, untill I had first visited some tippling house. As soon as we were come into his house, a servant came to take off his Cloak; he will'd him to let it alone, and they twain having talked together a while in their own language, he sent him forth: so that now being left all alone to our selves, we walked many a turn, and sometimes talked of one thing, sometimes of another. At last he drew neerer unto me, asking me divers questions concerning *Spain*; and amongst the

# The Life of Guzman

rest more particularly of my Mother, as how she was left, what was her Estate, how many Brothers she had, and in what street she liv'd? I gave him a full account of all, as wisely, and as advisedly as I could for my life.

In this discourse I entertain'd my self the better part of an hour, untill such time as his servant was returned. I know not what was his errand, nor what message he brought him back; but my old Fox turn'd about unto me, and said unto me; So, it is well enough for this bout, it is time for you to take your rest, get you to bed, and to morrow we shall see one another again, and then we shall enlarge our minds more freely to each other. Then he calls *O la Antonio Maria*, do you hear there? Come away, and conduct this Gentleman to his lodging. I went along with him from lodging to lodging, through this room, and that room, I knew not whither my self; it was a great large house, wrought with many goodly fair Pillars, whose pavement was all of Alabaster, hewn four-square.

At last we cross through a Court, and enter into a lodging that stood at the one end thereof, which was very well furnish'd, and fairly hung with Hangings of sundry sorts of colours, like unto your (b) *Arambals*, but that they seemed to be some-what better than they. The Beds-head lean'd against the wall, and close adjoining thereunto stood a little low stool. And as if he would have me to make my self unready, the servant that was appointed to attend me, offered his service to pull off my clothes. But they were such, and so ragged, that my self knew not very well how to put them either off, or on,

unless

(b) *Arambal*, Is a Moorish word: and is a courser sort of Hangings.

unlesse I took a great deal of care, disposing of one peece after another, for there was not any one part that was whole, or put in its proper place, so that it was impossible to discern or know, which was the Jerkin or the Breeches, when you saw them laid abroad, and stretched out upon the ground. So that I having undone some few knots, with the which I had fastened them together for want of points, I let them slide off from me at the beds feet. And thus fowl and slovenly as I was, and so lowlie as no man could well be worse, I crept me in between the sheets. The bed was soft and good, the sheets clean and sweet. And when I was laid, I began to think with my self, sure, this good old man is my kinsman, that he uses me thus kindly, but will not make himself known unto me, till to morrow morning. It is a good beginning, it cannot be but that he will give me new Cloathes, and deal kindly with me, since being in that poor and miserable estate as I was, he had given me such good entertainment. Questionless it is so, & now wil some fair fortune befall me. The servant, when he had me to bed, went forth of the Chaniber, leaving a Candle burning by me; I spake unto him, wishing him to put it out; He told me, I must hold him excused, and that he would not do so, for in the night time, there flye up and down in that Countrey (almost in every corner) certain Bats, or Rear-mise of an extraordinary bignesse to those in other places, which are very offensive, and do much hurt, & that the only remedy against them, is to have a light standing by ones bed-side, for they can by no means endure it, but seek to



avoid it by flying away from it into some blind corner or other.

He likewise told me, that this their Country was full of Hob-goblins and Robbin-good-fellows, which were all great enemies to the light: but in your dark lodgings, they did now and then play their parts, and do many a shrewd turn. All which I did believe with the greatest simplicity in the world.

This said, he went his wayes; and he was no sooner gone, but I presently got me up, and made fast the door, not that I was afraid of robbing (for I had nothing to lose) but out of a suspicion and jealousie that some one mischance or other might befall me; being young, unfriended, unknown, and in a strange place, where I never was before.

Having (as I thought) made all sure, I returned back again to my bed, fell presently asleep, enjoying (to my great content) a sweet and quiet rest; for the Pillows the (c) Coleboms, the Coverlets, and the sheets did drink a health unto me, and I (with a very good will) did soundly pledge them.

(c) Your  
Spanish  
Colchones  
are like  
your finer  
sort of Eng-  
lish Ma-  
tresses;  
quilted  
with  
Wooll, or  
Flax: for  
in your hot  
Countries  
they use no  
feather-  
beds.  
b. u. r.

The better part of the night was now overpast, the beam of mid-nights ballance began to decline, and leaned a little towards the break of day, whil't I, being in a dead sleep, was wakened on the suddain, with a confused noise of four parts: Devils they seemed to be by their shape, their habit, their black curled hair, and by those fearfull ugly Vizards which they had upon their faces.

Having walkt their Stations a while about the Chamber, they came at last unto the bed, wherein

where  
lost n  
speak  
me,  
God  
I cou  
self;  
time  
wer  
ther  
The  
the  
his  
the  
tro  
pr  
if  
no  
ha

th  
a  
to  
a  
c  
c  
l

wherein I lay, putting me in such a fright, that I lost my senses for a time, and without any word speaking, off they pluckt the Coverlets from me, anon after the sheets. I wondered what a Gods name would become of me; I fell as fast as I could for my life, to crossing and blessing of my self; I ran over my prayers; I called a thousand times upon the name of JESUS; but they were *Demonēs baptizati*, *Christen Devils*, and therefore drew still neerer and neerer unto me; They had put upon the *Colchone*, under the neether sheet, a Blanket; every one took hold of his corner, and haled me forth in the middle of the room. I was much amazed, and extremely troubled, when I saw that my prayers could not prevail; insomuch, that I did neither dare, and if I durst, yet was not able to open my mouth, nor to speak so much as one word, if I might have all the world for my labour.

The room was high-roofed, and fitted for their purpose; where, when they had me out amongst them, they began to blanket me, and to toss me up in the air, as they use to do doggs at Shrove-tide, till growing so weary, that they could hold out not longer, they left winowing of me (being sufficiently fanned already) and laid me down there again where they found me, and leaving me for dead, they covered me with the cloathes, and went out that way they came in, having first put out the light. I was so disjoynted, and so broken as it were in pieces, and so besides my self, that when it was day, I did not know whether I were in heaven or here upon earth.

It was now about eight of the morning, and I

was willing to rise, for that I found my self reasonably able to get up. Me thought, I did not smell so sweet as I should, my body cleaving to the sheets, no clay could be more clammy, nor any plaister cling closer.

This put me in mind of my old Masters wife, the Cook. I rubb'd over all my body with the cleanest places that I could meet withall in the sheets; which when I had done, I began to buckle my harneyes unto me, and fall a knitting of my old knots, to my older cloathes. And the longer I was in making of me ready, the more I did consider with my self, what a Devill that should be, that had befallen me this last night. And if when I rose up, I had not found my limbs almost shaken in pieces, my bones bruized, and in a manner out of joynt, I should verily have thought, that it had been but a dream. I look'd round about the room, but could by no means find which way they should come in. By the door it was impossible, for I had shut that sure, and found it fast lockt, as I left it.

Then I began to cast with my self, whether they might not be those Hob-goblins, and Robin-good-fellows, which the young man told me of overnight. But that (me thought) could not be.

Whil'st I was musing on this businesse, and devising with my self, how or which way they could get in; I lifted up the Hangings, to see, if behind them I could espie any little out-let; at last I lighted on an open window, which did butt out upon, the Court, thorow which we crost. Then I presently said with my self; This way were the Buls brought in, my hurt came in at this

this Wi  
and all  
skin, n  
your C  
gether  
I could  
I had p  
self qu  
as han  
as mi  
might  
feeble  
same  
me an

Th  
to me  
that I  
that  
woul  
in th  
him,  
kind  
unac  
way  
and  
V  
as i  
my  
Vil  
bly  
ov  
to  
w  
ty  
V

this Window : And albeit every rib in my body, and all my bones throughout, did rattle in my skin, making such a noise for all the world as your Cheffe-men do, when you shake them together in the bag, yet I did dissemble it all that I could ( in regard of that slovenly part which I had play'd against my will) till I should see my self quite-clear. of the house : I threw up the bed as handsomely as I could, covering all as close as might be, that if any should come in, they might not smell out my fault, and find out the feebleness of my retentive faculties, and so the same Devils be brought in again, and torment me anew.

The servant, that brought me thither, came to me towards nine of the clock, and told me that his Master expected me in the Church, and that I must go thither upto him ; And because I would not willingly have his man stay behind in the Chamber, that I might get the start of him, I intreated him that he would do me the kindness to bring me to the door, because I was unacquainted with the house, and knew not the way out. So he brought me forth into the street, and returned back again.

When I saw I was come off cleer from him, as if I had been born with wings at my feet, and my body had bin sound and whole, I took (d) *Villa diego* his breeches, and tript away so nimbly, that he that had run post, should hardly have overtaken me. I bought something by the way to satisfie hunger, and for to gain time I eat as I went, and made no stay till I was out of the City. Where in a Tavern I call'd for a Cup of Wine, where-with I refresh't my self, that I might

*Villa Diego*  
was driven  
to his  
shifts, and  
not having  
time to put  
on his  
breeches  
was forced  
to flee away  
with them  
in his  
hand.

walk

# The Life of Guzman

walk the stronger towards *Rome*, whither I had directed my journey, thinking all the way as I went, upon that grosse scorn, whereby they thought to banish me out of *Genoa*, to the end that my poverty might not disgrace them: but I did not remain their Debtor, as you shall see hereafter.

When I drew neer to a little Village, some ten miles off from *Genoa*, I sate me down, not knowing whither to go, being bruised in my body, naked of cloathes, without mony in my purse, and black and blew all over, as if I had been beaten with a cudgell.

Behold and view me well, for I am one of those, with whom necessity fell in love, she never left following me, but kept me company at bed and at board; she made me study the (e) Brivatick Art. This was the course I ran, I was to day in one place, and to morrow in another, begging an Almes of all that I met with.

(e) Brivition, is a loytring fellow that will not work, but go from Town to Town, from house to house, to beg a peece of bread and a Dish of drink,

I must confesse, there is much charity used in *Italy*, and so much, that this new Trade that I had betaken my self unto, made me loath to leave it, I found so much sweetness in it. For in a few daies I grew flush, and able to make wings to maintain my flight; So that from *Genoa*, whence I came, till I saw *Rome*, where I staid, I performed all that voyage without spending so much as one farthing. The mony that was given, I kept that whole and entire, and for victuals, I had ever sufficient, and more than would serve my turn.

Having recourse still at noon to those places, where there was either bread, or porrage to be had. I visited your Cardinals, your Embassadors

dors,  
great  
another  
my gu  
was t  
unto  
groun  
and d  
how  
what  
such  
shion  
not  
that  
of be  
lake.

Y  
to th  
the l  
bera  
will  
that  
from  
pow  
ton  
T  
wit  
pur  
to  
to  
ma

In  
of  
th

dors, your Princes, your Bishops, and other great mens houses; I was directed unto them, by another young youth of that Countrey, he was my guide, who was well skill'd in that craft, and was the first Tutor that ever read any Lectures unto me in this kind. He taught me the first grounds and principles of this learned Science, and the different *Species* and forms of begging, how this man was to be sought unto, how that; what phrase of language to be used towards such a sort of people, and what a differing fashion to those of another kind. For men do not care for curious words and choice phrases, that which they like best, is an honest plain kind of begging *Por amor de Dios*. Good Sir, for Gods sake, bestow one poor penny upon me.

Your women they are wonderfully devoted to the Virgin *Mary*, to our Lady *del Rosario*, and the like: with these you may be a little more liberal of your Language, beseeching God that he will direct all their Actions to his holy service, that he would deliver them from all deadly sin, from the accusation of false witnesses, from the power of Traytors, and the malice of evil tongues.

This being well pronounced, and repeated, with a strong and earnest delivery, makes their purses presently flie open. He taught me how to work the rich to compassion, the poorer sort to pitty, how to oblige the religious devout man.

I did run over all the streets of *Rome*, and that I might not be too troublesome by begging too often in one place, or of one person, I did divide the whole City into certain quarters, every working

working day, walking my several Station; but on Sundaies and Holy-daies, I was wholly for your Churches, I never mist, but punctually kept my houres, and there I made good purchase. But that which I made most profit of, were the pieces of bread that were given me: These I sold, and they yeilded me many a fair penny. Part whereof those poor men did buy, which did not go up and down a begging, but were next door to it; some I sold to poor Country-folkes, such as make a living of feeding Pigs, and fatting of Poultry. But those that were my best pay-masters, were your \**Turroneros*, for to make their *Alaxur* or (f) *Alfaxor*, as they call it in *Castile*. I did help my self besides, with some old household ragges, who, for that they saw I was young, and naked, did in pitty bestow them upon me, which were something worth to me.

\* A *bisket* made with Honey, Almonds, smal Nuts, Walnuts, Kernels of Pine-Apples, &c. (f) *Alfaxor*, is a kinde of Conserve made of Honey, Spices, & crumbs of bread.

Afterwards, I fell in company with some other of more ancient standing in that faculty, for the better encreasing of my knowledge. These Rogues had been admitted into the Livery long ago, and had born Office of Renters and Wardens, men that had held preeminence amongst them, and deserv'd to be masters of their Company. With these I went to some known Doles; there being some men that did daily (out of meer devotion) distribute Almes every morning to the poor in their particular house. Going once to receive this Dole in the French Embassadors house, I might hear other poor beggers, that were behind me, begin to murmur, saying, This Spanish unhappy Boy, which beggeth now here in *Rome*, is newly come, and a neer stranger in this place, he is not acquainted with

with this course of life, and for want of knowledge, (by that which I have observed in him) he is likely to beat down the market, and if some order be not quickly taken with him, he will undo us all. For having once fill'd his belly, in the most places where he comes, if they give him any victuals, he refuses to take them, and tels them (God be thanked) he hath dined well enough already. He will quite overthrow the Art of begging, by giving the world by this means to understand, that we poor Rogues have more given us than we can well tell what to do withall. So that if he run this course a little longer, he will hurt us, and do himself no good.

Another of their comrags, that was there with them, Tush (quoth he) hold ye your peace, let me alone with this Lad, I will take him to task, and ye shall see how I will work him, I will instruct him how to understand himself, and how he may not easily be understood by others. Leave him (I say) to me. With that, speaking softly unto me, he called me unto him, and we went out alone by our selves from all the rest of the Company. He was an excellent Proficient, and a very ready and dextrous man in all that appertained to that Art.

The first thing that he did, was to examine my life, asking me, Whence I was? What was my name? When, and to what end I was come thither? Then did he deliver unto me the great obligation that Beggars had to keep a *decorum* in all their actions, to hold correspondence one with another, and to link in love together like sworn brothers; and that I should inform my self of certain curiosities, and secrets, and some Prin-



Principles, which I did not as yet know. For in very truth, that which I learned of my youth afore-mentioned, and of other poor Rogues of lesse talent, and far inferiour both in knowledge and experience, were all trivial things, and of no esteem, in comparison of those precepts which I received from this Grand-master of his faculty. He gave me certain Rules, which I shall never forget as long as I live.

Amongst the which, one was, that I should unfold three or four leaves of my stomake, and open the book to a plain vomit, yet to be so well read therein, that it should not appear to the world, that it proceeded from any surfet, or that I had over-charged my stomach. He taught me a trick how to turn up my stomach in some by-corner; which brought two good effects.

First, it moved the people to compassion, thinking that I was sick: Secondly, though afterwards I should swallow down two Platters of warm pottage, there would be room enough still for more. I knew how many bits I was to eat, and how I was to look upon the bread that they gave me, how to kisse it, and how often, and what kind of countenance to cast upon it: What fashion of behaviour I was to use, and how to carry my self upon all occasions, differing the form, according to the diversity of mens dispositions. I knew the true tune of my voyce, when I was to rise, and when to fall with it. I knew the set hours wherein i was to repair to such or such a place; in what houses I might enter in even to the bed-side, and in what I might presse no further than the door. I knew whom I might be bold to importune, and be earnest withall

withall in my craving; and whom again I ought not to sollicit or speak unto above once. In conclusion, he gave me in writing all the Statute-Laws, and Orders ordained by that free Common-wealth of beggers, instructing me in the observation of them, for the avoiding of scandall, and the better informing of my understanding. And these are they that follow.

*The Laws and Odinances amongst Beggars.*

FORasmuch as all Nations have their proper method of Begging, and are distinguished by a differing form from all others: as are your *Almans* by their singing, your *French-men*, by their praying; your *Flemmings*, by their making of legs, and their low and frequent Congies; your *Gypsies*, by their importuning; your *Portugals*, by their weeping; your *Italians*, by their long Circumlocutions; and your *Spaniards*, by their big looks, and high language, whereby they make themselves hateful to their own hurt, being held no better than vain babblers, and a kind of insufferable proud Rogues; these therefore we more especially will and command, that they reform this disorder, bear themselves civilly, that they do not curse, nor blaspheme, but that they keep good order, according to our Statutes and Ordinances in that case provided.

*Item*, we will and command; That none of our brother Rogues, or begger whatsoever, of these Nations, shall joyn and unite himself with those of another Country, or shall make any Covenant, Compact, or alliance, with any blind men, that go saying their prayers from door to door,

door, nor with any Mountebanks, Musicians, nor Poets, nor with Slaves set at liberty from the tyranny of the Turks, nor with old Souldiers, which being tatter'd and torn, have forsaken their colours, and fled from their Captains; nor with Mariners, that have no more mind to go to Sea. For howbeit all and every one of them do agree well together in all kind of cheating, and roguish tricks, and would make excellent beggers, yet the Art it self of begging, and the language are much differing. And therefore we will and command every one of these to keep his own quarter, and strictly to observe such orders as are set down and ordained in that case.

*Item,* We will and command that the poor of every Nation, have certain Taverns, and known victualling houses, where shall ordinarily preside and govern three or four of the more ancient amongst them, having staves in their hands, as Ensignes of their precedence, and authority: Whom we depute, to treat in those places of all such Accidents and other things that shall happen there, or shall otherwise be brought to their knowledge. That they shall sit in Councell, and give their opinion thereupon. And when they have so done, they may afterwards play at Fox mine Host, or some other drinking Game, at Cards or Dice for their recreation, and to wash away care. They may sit over the Cup, and tell old Stories: they may recount the famous Acts, done either by themselves, or others, as also of their Ancestors, and boast of those wars, wherein they have served, and what-soever else they shall think fit for entertainment.

*Item,*

*Item*, We will and command; That every begger carry a good Bat or Cudgell in his hand, and those that are able, to put a good Pike at the end of it, that they may be armed and provided against all casualties, that may befall either their Purse, or their Persons. Which they are to do upon penalty of their own hurt.

*Item*, That no begger may, or do wear any new garment, or but half worn out, save such as is rent and thred-bare, and full of patches, by reason of the ill example that may grow thereby, and the generall hurt that may come of it. Alwayes provided, that if any such Coat or Cloak be given by way of Almes, that then it shall be lawful for him to wear it that day only wherein it was given him, without any farther limitation of licence, but the next day following to put it off, & never wear it more, but forthwith to alter the property, upon pain of our general displeasure, and his own particular hinderance.

*Item*, We will and command, That in the taking of their places, and their seats, they do all and every one of them observe the antiquity of possession, and not of the person; preferring the ancients in standing before the elder in years. And that no man shall dare or presume, to usurp or defraud one another in this kind.

*Item*, We will and command, That two sick, or two lame persons may joyn and go together, and call Brothers, but with this condition, that they beg by turns, and strain their voices as high as they can reach; the one still beginning where the other leaveth, observing equall time and tune, every one keeping his own side of the street; and not using any artificial phrazer, or

# The Life of Guzman

affected form of speeches, let each of them expresse, as significantly as he can, his particular grief; and let them afterwards part and share the gains between them, upon pain of our Worships displeasure.

*Item,* We will and command, That no begger carry from the knife upwards, any armes, either offensive or defensive. That he wear no Gloves, Pantofles, Spectacles, his hose trussed, or his stockings gartered, upon pain of forfeiting of all his temporalties.

*Item,* It is farther enacted, that they may wear a foul filthy clout knit about their heads instead of a Kerchieff.

They may also bear about them a pair of Sizers, a Knife, an Awl, Needle and thread, a Thimble, wooden Dish, a little Hand-basket, a Scrip, a Wallet. Be it alwayes provided, that they bear no Sack at their back, no basket of burthen, no Knap-sack, nor any such like kind of things as these be. But it shall be onely lawfull for them to walk with two Crutches, and a fore legge, with a long and deep tent in it.

*Item,* We will and command, That all beggers bear two purses about them; one little one, and another of a bigger size, besides certain private pockets for closter conveyance, that may safely endure a search; and that they put the almes that is given them into their Hat.

*Item,* We will and command, that no man discover the secrets and Mysteries of our Trade, nor divulge and publish them abroad, save only to those that are Professors of the said Art. And he that shall invent or find out any new trick, or cunning device for the common good, shall be bound

bound to manifest the same to the incorporation of beggars ; to the end that it may be understood and known of all. But for the better encouraging of others, and that notice may be taken of our good government ; We give privilege , and plenary power to the first Inventor and Author thereof, that for the space of one whole and compleat year, he make his best benefit of the first impression, not suffering or permitting any, without his special and particular Licence , to use or exercise the same, upon pain of our heavy displeasure.

*Item,* We will and command, that all beggars shall manifest and make known to one another, all those houses, where any almes are to be had, especially those, where there is any Gaming, as also such places , where your Gallants use to meet, and court their Mistresses ; for that is a certain rent, and seldome faileth.

*Item,* We will and command, that no begger breed any hunting Hounds, Grey-hounds, or bloud-hounds, nor may in his own house have any more than one little Mungril-cur ; for the which we give free liberty and licence, and that he lead him along with him either ty'd in a string, or otherwise fastened to his girdle.

*Item,* We will and command, that none shall carry a dog about with him, making him to dance and leap thorow a Hoop : nor shall it be lawful for him to have or hold any place to beg at the door of any Church , any station, or Jubilee, onely he shall have free leave to beg as he passes along by the street, upon pain of being counted contumacious and rebellious to our Laws and Ordinances.

# The Life of Guzman

*Item,* We will and command, that no begger presume to come to the Butchers-shambles, or to the fish-market, to buy either fish or flesh, save in case of extreme necessity, and licence of the Physician; nor that he sing, play upon any Instrument, leap or dance, by reason of the scandal that may arise by so doing.

*Item,* We licence and permit, that such beggers as are so disposed, may rent certain children to the number of four (but not above) their ages being first examined; and if two of them be taken for twins, born of one womb, at one and the self-same time, it shall not be thought amiss of, in case that the elder of the two be not above five years old. And if it be a woman that goes about with these children, she shall bear one of them sucking at her breast; and if a man, he shall carry one of them in his arms, and lead the other along by the hand, and not otherwise.

*Item,* We will and command, that those beggers that have any children, they make setting Dogs of them, to lie watching close at your Churches, and have still an eye upon those that come in and out, for whom it shall be lawful to beg an alms, for their poor Father or Mother, that lie very sick, and keep their beds, and have nothing to help themselves withall, having four or five small children, that are ready to starve for want of food. Alwayes provided, that it be so taken and understood, that this Patent extends not to any that is above six years of age; for if they shall once exceed and passe those years, then are they to shift for themselves, and like birds that are flush, to forsake the nest, and like Hounds

Hounds that are ready to be entred, nose out their own living, and go abroad.

*Item,* We will and command, that no begger give consent, or suffer his children to serve, to be bound Prentice to any Trade, or to wait upon any man, whom he shall acknowledge for his Master. For their gains will be little, and their labour much: And therein they shall greatly offend, by not following the steps of their fore-fathers, and running a course quite contrary to that good way, wherein they have been born and bred.

*Item,* We will and command, that by seven in the morning in the Winter, and at five in the Summer, no begger be in his bed, or keep his lodging, but by break of day, as soon as the Sun shall be ready to peep forth, or some half hour before, they go abroad to gather honey. And likewise, that some half an hour before the shutting in of the Evening, he by all meaps, and at all times retire himself and get him home; save only in some cases reserved, and that with our especiall leave and licence.

*Item,* We permit and give leave, that they may break their fast in the morning, eating a morsell of some thing or other, if they have laboured for their living, and gotten any thing the same morning, and not otherwise. For therein they lose time (which is a precious thing) and spend upon the stock, by diminishing the principall. But with condition, that he wash and cleanse his mouth, that the sent thereof be not perceived.

*Item,* We will and command, that no man dare to play the Impostor, or commit any gross villany, as to steal household-stuff, or help to



convey it away, or exchange it for other, or to untile houses, or strip children of their clothes, or to commit any the like base action, upon pain of being excluded from our brother-hood, and put out of our incorporation, and to be remitted over to the secular power.

*Item,* Our will and pleasure is, that every begger, when he shall be of full age : that is, (three yeers after twelve, being fully compleat and ended) having legally and worthily laboured in that course of life, and attained to the true art of this our free and noble Profession, he be held, taken, known, and understood to have fulfilled the Law, and comply'd with the Statute : notwithstanding, that two other years to gain experience, and to learn how to drive the fish into the net, have alwaies to this very day and present hour, been thought very necessary and expedient : and ever after to be held as a Graduate, that hath performed his exercise, and taken degree amongst us. And having thus made proof of his learning and manners, we farther will and command, that he have, hold, and enjoy all the Liberties, Privileges, and exemptions granted by us under our great Seai; but with this condition, that he neither may forsake our service, and that he shew his obedience unto us, by observing our Laws, and Statutes, and by submitting himself to our Censure, in case he shall offend against them.

## CHAP. II.

*Guzman reprehended by a learned Rogue, and Doctor in his faculty, he learned of him some new Orders, concerning a roguish life, and that which hapned unto him thereupon.*

BESIDES these Ordinances, they had many other which they duly kept and observed, which were prescribed and compiled by the advice and counsell of the famousst Rogues in Italy. These were much illustrated in those daies by one, whose proper name was *Alberto*, whose surname *Mizer Morcon*; Whom in Rome, we had made choice of for our General; Who, for his stature, shape, proportion of body, his fashion, conversation, and commendable carriage, deserved to have the Imperial Crown set upon his head. For he far surpassed all his Predecessors. He might deservedly be stiled the Prince of Roguery, and the Arch-begger of Christendome. I never saw him button'd, nor covered from the girdle upward, never to wear any girdle, nor so much as half a hose or shooe upon foot or legge; His head was evermore bare, his beard close shaven, and his skin all over his body did shine and glister, as if it had been annointed and basted with Bacon. This upright man did ordain, that every poor body should carry about with him a wooden-dish in the Crown of his hat, or some other convenient place, and the dried rinde of a pampion,

*Mizer Morcon General and Superintendent over the beggers.*

*Orders, set  
down by  
Morcon,  
King of  
Beggars.*

wherein to put his Wine clapping it in some close place, where it might not be seen.

That when he came to drink, he should sup it out of a Caldron, a Kettle, a great earthen Pan, some broad Tub, or huge Vat, or the like, and then too, to thrust in his head, like a beast, and not in any other manner.

That he that should not drink a sound draught after his Sallet, should be made incapable to drink afterwards, as long as that supper, or dinner lasted, and to rise up a thirst.

That no begging Rogue should buy, or eat any Comfits, Conserves, or the like sweet things.

That every one should eat either Salt, or Pepper with his meat: unlesse it hath been there with seasoned before.

That your poor Rogues shall be bound to sleep upon the ground in their cloathes, without Pillow or Bolster, lying upon their backs, with their faces up to heaven.

That having gotten enough to spend that day he goes a begging, he shall trouble himself no farther, nor begge any more for that day, but give way to others to glean, where he left off.

This our *Mizer Morcon*, when he did eat, would lie lazing all along upon the ground, and would sleep both Winter and Summer, without any covering of Sheet, Blanket, or any thing else that might keep him warm.

Our Laws and Orders, I committed to memory, and was perfect in them, but did observe no more of them, save such as appertained to good government, and of these I was every way as religious, and observant, as if my Salvation had depended upon the true keeping of them. I made

made  
of feli  
my Pe  
ling.  
and n  
want  
in th  
short  
them  
much  
U  
temb  
I we  
such  
pres  
shou  
veri  
taki  
som  
I  
no c  
get  
Sta  
hou  
evi  
a b  
ma  
to  
at  
an  
th  
an  
se  
fo  
ft

made it my chief happineſſe, and placed a kind of felicity therein, that my Actions might credit my Profeſſion, and become abſolute in my calling. But becauſe as yet I was but green fruit, and not come to my full ripeneſſe, whereby I wanted much of my true relliſh, I failed much in the practick part of my profeſſion, and fell ſhort daily in ſuch casualties as did uſually offer themſelves unto me, and in many of them I did much erre.

Upon a Feaſt-day, about the beginning of September, towards one of the clock in the afternoon, I went forth into the City, in that great heat, and ſuch a ſcorching Sun, that I am not able to expreſs it, perſwading my ſelf, that whoſoever ſhould hear me beg at that time of day, would verily think, that I was wondrous hungry, and taking pittie of me, would relieve me with ſomething or other.

I would needs (meerly out of curioſity, and no other end elſe in the world) ſee what I could get at theſe unſeaſonable hours. I walkt my Stations through ſome ſtreets, and viſited many houſes, but could get nothing from them, ſave evil words, giving me foul language, and many a bitter curſe, asking me in a devils name what I made there? And ſo roming about from houſe to houſe, I came at laſt to one, where I knockt at the door with my Staſſe, but no body would answer me. I knockt the ſecond time, and the third, but all was one. Then I enlarged my voice, and began in the higheſt key I could reach, to ſet out my throat, and to beg as loud as I could for my life. For the houſe was very great, and ſtood far within, and therefore ſuppoſed they could

could hardly hear me, unless I strained my note a little higher. Whil'st I was thus balling at the door, a roguish Boy of the Kitchin, who (as it should seem) was scouring of Dishes, came just to the same window, under which I directly stood, and threw down upon me a great bucket of scalding water; and when he saw it had fairly lighted upon me, he leisurely utters: *Aqua va, guardaos debaxo*. Ware water, look to your selves there below. With that I began to cry out, that all the street did ring of me, grievously complaining, that I was kill'd by some in that house, and that it was impossible I should live. True it is, that I was scalded, but not in that cruel manner as I made my crimination.

With this vociferation of mine, and the lamentable exclamation that I made, the people flockt about me, and every one spake what he thought: One said it was ill done; another, that it was mine own fault; and though my self had no mind to sleep, yet I ought in good manners to suffer others to take their rest.

There were some others, that did comfort me the best they could, and of those that were somewhat more tender-hearted than the rest, I made a shift to pick up some money amongst them, and with the help of that, I went first where I might dry my self, and afterwards got me home to take my rest; muttering to my self, as I went along. I drew neer at last to mine own lodging, and there hard by dwelt an old poor man, about some threescore and ten yeers of age, who was born of beggerly Parents, that had born Offices in our Incorporation, and had left his Trade of begging unto him by inheritance, where-

wherewith he made a shift to live, and to pass his life away here upon earth.

He was of *Cordoue*, there was he born: Which I the rather tell you, that you may know that he was dy'd in his wooll, a notable Rogue in grain, whom his Mother brought to *Rome* sucking at her brest, in the year of *Jubilee*.

When he saw me pass by in that miserable pickle, looking for all the world like a Dish-clout, all wet, all to be moyl'd, foul and full of grease, & all to be spatterd with the refuse leaves of Coleworts, and the over-sodden empty Husks of Pease, wherewith my garments were imbroi-dered all over; he askt me what had hapned unto me? I acquainted him with the whole success of the business. He was ready to burst himself with laughing, and having made himself merry a while at my misfortune, composing his countenance, with a settled kind of gravity, in the end he said thus unto me.

I fear me (my friend *Guzman*) that you will prove another *Benitillo*, you are such a Hot-spur, and your young blood boyles so fast within you, that you would fain come to be a Master, before you have attain'd to be a Scholar. Dost thou not now perceive, that thou hast done ill, in exceeding thy Commission, and in breaking those customes that are ordered and ordained by the Company? Yet, because thou art my Countryman, and a young Lad (and therefore apt to err) I will teach and instruct thee, what thou oughtest to do, and how to behave thy self. Sit thee down by me, and hearken well to that which I shall say unto thee.

And first of all, I would have thee to consider,  
That

*A begger that was a Cordovese, teacheth Guzman many lessons concerning the Art of begging.*

That thou must not go a begging in the Summer time presently after dinner, when most men are disposed to lie down and take a Nap, in some place of shade, or some cool room: and less at Noble mens houses, than those of your Trades-men and Citizens. The hour is improper, and unfit, and all of them then either do, or at least are desirous to take their rest. And it would be as strange, as troublesome unto them, that any should then offer to wake them; and importunities, at that time of all other, are most irksome, and displeasing unto them.

Next, I would have thee take this rule of me, That when you have call'd or knock't at one door twice, either there is no body within, or they will not be within, because they are not willing to answer. When thou perceiv'st that, get thee gone, and stay there no longer; for thou may'st well lose thy time, but thou shalt get no money.

Never offer to draw a Latch, or to thrust open a door that is put to, nor to enter within the house. For it hapneth sometime in the opening of a door, that a dog may suddainly rush fiercely forth upon thee, and carry away half a Buttock at a bit. Nor do I know how these scurvy Curs should come to know us, so well as they do, but I am sure we are hated of them, and they will never let us pass by them, without barking, or biting.

When thou beggest for an Almes, thou must not laugh, nor change thy nose, but so tune thy voice, that it may carry the name of one that is sick, having a special care, that your face keep

an

an even correspondence with your eyes; your mouth it's equall and just compass, and your head bending towards your bosome.

Rub thy face a mornings, when thou risest, with a cloth that is rather dankish, than dung-wet, that when thou goest abroad, thou may'st seem neither fair, nor foul. And on thy clothes, clap many patches, though they be never so whole; and let them be of divers colours. For it much importeth, that a poor mans clothes should be rather patch'd, than neat and cleanly: yet so, that they be not so slovenly, as to cause loathsomenesse.

It will sometimes so fall out, that comming to a man to beg an Almes, he will take off his Glove, and put his hand into his pocket, and in the end, thou shalt see him only pull out his Hand-kerchief to blow his Nose. But for all this, thou must not be angry, nor seem to grumble, for it may be some other may be by him, which will give thee some-what, though he do not. Whereas, if he shall perceive thy proud and sullen carriage, he will give thee nothing.

Where thou shalt find thy self well used, see thou repair thither daily: For as devotion shall abound, so shall thy stock increase. But see, that thou never depart from his door, till thou have pray'd for his friends that are deceased, and to intreat of God, that he will be pleased to bless and prosper him in all his Actions.

Answer evill language, with milde words; and to rough speech, apply soft tearms; he that will draw money out of another mans purse, must rather beg than brawl; crave, than curse; pray, than blasphemc.

When



When they shall not give thee an Almes, answer with devotion. God bless your worship, and grant much health, peace, and content to this house for the great good, and mercy, that you daily do, and shew unto the poor. This trick got me a great deal of money; for answering them so gently, and so mildly, holding up my hands, and lifting up my eyes unto heaven, they would call me back again, and give me of that they had.

Besides all this, he taught me how to feign my self a Leper, to make wounds in my flesh, to raise a swelling in my leg, to benum an arm, to set a counterfeite colour on the face, to alter the whole body; and other curious principles of his art; to the end that some might not twit us in the teeth, and upbraidingly say unto us; that our limms were sound, and our selves strong and healthy, that we should work for our living, and that it were no charity, to relieve such lusty stout young Rogues. He did me many friendly Offices, he had many curious secrets of nature, whereof he made good use; Nor did he hide any thing from me; for he found me very capable, and apt to receive whatsoever he should put into me; & then he began to say unto me, you see my foot is already in the stirrop to go unto my grave, and I would willingly leave a Chaplain behind me to pray unto God for me. And it fell out true as he said: for within a short time after he died.

We did some of us meet many times together, to repeat our parts, and what manner of exclamations would best become us, and make most for our profit; these were studied by night, in-  
venting

venting divers methods and formes of benediction. There was a poor man that got his living only by making these forms for us, and did sell them unto us.

On festival dayes we would be up betimes, where the Pardons and Indulgences were stirring, that we might provide us some good place in the Church: for it was no small benefit unto him, that could get neer unto the Font where the Holy-water was, or to that little Chappel, where they were to make their station.

We would now and then go a Progreſs, and run over all the Country, not leaving out a Village, nor so much as a Cottage bordering thereabouts, which we did not go unto; whence we came very well furnisht: For they would give us Bacon, Cheese, Bread, and Egges in great abundance, besides clothes to cover our nakedness, pitying very much our poor and miserable condition.

We would many times beg a draught of Wine for Gods sake, complaining much of the pain and weakness of our stomach.

We usually went shod, but as good have been unshod, our heads covered, but as good have gone bare; So that we had shooes, and no shooes; hats, and no hats; For our shooes were sandal-fashion, old enough, and torn enough, and our hats were suitable unto them; they would scarce hang on our feet, the other scarce fit on our heads.

We seldome wore any shirt at all. For, when (according to our accustomed humility) we should crave an Alms at such a door; they would ordinarily say, Pardon me (my friend;)

*The fashion of Beggers in begging almes.*

I have not for you. God help you, I will give you something at another time. Then we begin anew, and cry; An old pair of shooes, or an old hat (good Master) for this poor soul; that hath never a shoe to his foot to bear him out of the dirt, nor never a hat to defend his head from the Sun and the rain; Gods holy name be praised. The Lord blefs your Worship; and deliver your good Worship from such a deal of misery and wretchedness, as we poor creatures indure. God multiply his blessings upon you, and free you and yours, and all that you have, from the power of Traitors and Villaines; Christ Jesus guard your Worship, and give you health both of body and soul.

If after this he shall reply: Indeed (brother) I have not for you; I cannot pleasure you at this time, excuse me.

Then we beseech him to be bestow some old shirt, though never so ragged and torn, for to cover the flesh, and to cure the wounds of this poor miserable man, and that he shall find it again in heaven, and that God will one day cover him again with the clothing of his mercy, and put upon him a newer and whiter stole of innocency and righteousness, that shall never wear out. I beg it of you for Jesus Christ his sake, he knows my wants, and that I am not able to work and labour for my living. The Lord help me; And the Lord reward you. And praised be that pure unspottedness of our blessed Lady the Virgin Mary.

What heart, though as hard as steel, will not be made malleable with this hammer, and melt into compassion with the heat and warmth of so many good words?

Few

Few houses did escape us, without some one purchase or other. And never a pair of shooes could be so bad, no hat so vile, and no shirt so old, but yeelded us more than a piece of three pence. We had Merchants and Brokers for every one of these things, who would lay us down money for them.

We had upon the way certain little Asses, whereon we did ride by turns, when any store of rain fell, that we might the better passe over the Rivers, when the waters were risen. And if we did light by chance upon any person, that seemed to bear the face of authority, we began to call upon him a far off, many a large step before we came at him, to the end that he might have leisure enough to pull out his purse, and take forth an almes, else many would forbear to give us, least they might be hindred in their journey, but taking this course, we did seldome misse.

Other whiles, when we saw fit occasion and time for it, upon discovery of some company of people that came trooping together, we would prepare our selves to put on a counterfeite lame-nesse, to fall a halting, and betake us to our Crutches: we would change our looks, alter our countenances, take one another upon our backs, writhe our mouths, turn the lids and balls of our eyes to heaven, some feigning themselves dumb, other some crippled, and blind, making shew that we could not go but upon Stilts, when as indeed we were as nimble and light-footed as the Buck. We would clap our feet in a trice in certain Swathes, that hung at our necks for that purpose, and carry our arms

in a string, so that these counterfeite tricks, and the help of good language, desiring God to send them well on their journey, and that he would preserve their limbs, and blesse their eyesight, and bring them safe to their journeys end, did alwaies bring us in money.

We had one excellent gift above all the rest. That there was not any Feast, where we were not present; our noses were so good that we could smell such things some ten streets off.

We had no house at all, yet every house was ours; For either a Cardinals, an Embassadours, or some Noble-mans Porch or other did never fail us; And if all, or any of these did fail us, the Church Porches were free, and no body could there put us out. So that having no property in any thing, we did notwithstanding possesse every thing.

There were some likewise, that had old minous Castles, decayed buildings, and other poor lodgings not worth any thing, where we did make our *Rendexvous*.

### CHAP. III.

*Guzman recounteth what besell him with a Gentleman: And of the free life, and great liberty which a Begger enjoys.*

*What manner of Cloak Guzman had?*

I Stood one day in the outward Court of a Cardinals house, hard by the Porch, closely wrapt and muffled up in a great Ruffet Cloak, which was so full of Patches one clapt upon another, that you could not at all, or very hardly discern

discern the ground. It was as hard and as stiff as any board, wondrous warm, and no air, water, nor cold would pass thorow it.

Whil'st I was thus waiting, there comes me in a Cavallero to visit the Cardinall, seeming both by his Person, and his attendants, to be a Gentleman of principal rank and quality. Who, when he saw me standing there in this manner, thought verily with himself, that I was sick of an Ague, and that I had then my cold fit upon me: when as indeed the cause that I lookt so pitiful was, that I had lain in the Porch the night before; and because it was winter time, and that the air was fresh, and the wind blew cold, I was willing to keep me where I was, till the day had advanced it self a little more forward.

He look'd earnestly upon me, and beckned me unto him. I sneak'd out my head, when I came near. He (good Gentleman) thought that I did shake and tremble, and kindly said unto me; Put on thy Hat, my Boy, put on, I say, and cover thy head; God comfort thee and send thee well. And with that putting his hand into his pocket, he took out all he had, which was a matter of some thirteen *Royals* and a half, and gave them me. I took them, and was so ravished therewith, that I was almost besides my self, as well in regard of the liberalness of the Alms, as to see how he went away from me, lifting up his eyes unto heaven.

Your Senators of *Rome* could not live more merrily than we did.

And we have besides two such Privileges, as none of them all, no not the best man in *Rome* hath the like: The one is a kind of liberty that

*The great  
privileges  
belonging  
unto beg-  
gers.*

we have in begging ; the liberty of craving is permitted only to the poor ; And in this we are equal with Kings and Princes, whose particular privilege it is, to demand Subsidies , and Aid-mony. But the difference is , that Kings crave of the Commons, for the Common good, But the poor, for themselves only.

That other Privilege, which I told you of, is that of the five Senses. Who is he now a daies in the world, that with larger licence, and freer liberty doth enjoy them, than the poor man, or with greater security, or more content ? Who doth so thoroughly & so feelingly taste them as he ? And because I have named the word Taste, I will begin first with that.

There is not that pot, which we do not Skim; not that meat, which we do not prove; nor that banquet, wherein we have not a share. He runs through all mens houses, he begs of them all, and he tastes of all : and he is best able to say, which house hath the best meat, and the best drest.

For the hearing ; Who hears more than the poor man doth ? For being dis-interested in all kind of things none are jealous that he should hear them in the open streets, in private houses, in publick Churches, in the Market place, and in every place, every man treats freely of his businessse, without any suspicion of him. Sleeping besides a nights, upon some bulk or stall in the street, what Musick have they bestowed upon them, which we hear not ? What Love-tricks are they privy to, which we know not ? Nothing is kept secret from such poor beggerly Rascals as we be. And for publick affairs, we have

have by a thousand parts better intelligence, than all the world besides. For we hear that treated of in more parts, than all men else besides put all together.

For your Seeing likewise : how freely may we enjoy it, without being noted ? nor ask the question why we gaze upon them. How often have I, when begging in the Church, chuckt and hugg'd my self, with the delight and pleasure that I have taken in feeding mine eyes greedily on those Angelicall faces of your finest Ladies, whose Lovers did not dare to look upon them for fear of being noted ?

For matter of smelling ; who can smell better than we, who are called by the name of Smell-Feasts ? And if we be desirous of any odours, we get us to the corner of some one street or other, where these things are commonly sold, and there we satisfy our sense of smelling with the sweet perfumes of Jerkins, and of Gloves, some civited, and some powdred.

Will you happily say, that the sense of Touching is wanting unto us ? And that never any good thing came yet to our hands ? Lament your ignorance. What such difference, I pray, is there betwixt poverty and beauty ? We poor beggers touch and handle as good ware as the rich, and enjoy as pretty Commodities ; but all men do not understand this Mystery. There be some poor men, which for all their beggery and poverty, maintain such a handsome *Doxy*, as many a great rich man would be glad to enjoy with all his heart. And yet this poor man, doth truly pay her her Tribute, and is not wanting unto her in his love. And when some women



have given me an alms with their own hand, I would make bold to take hold of hers with mine; and in a kind of devout acknowledgment, would never let it go, till I had kist it.

To have  
money, to  
pay it a-  
gain away,  
is not the  
enjoying of  
money.

But these are but toys to speak of, and meer fooleries, but above all these things, the taste, the sight, smelling, hearing, and touching, the chiefest and truest of all the five Senses, put them all together, was that of those ruddy cheeks of your golden Ruddocks, you Spanish Pistolets, your plump and full-fac'd Portuguese, and your clear-skin'd pieces of eight of Castile, which we kept secret to our selves, and did privately enjoy in a plentiful manner; For to have them, for to pay them away, is not to enjoy them; These we did carry about with us, sewing them in some patches of our doublets near unto the heart, and as close to the skin, as we could handsomely quilt them in, holding them to be restorative. There was not any one piece of a patch about us, were it never so foul, and never so vile, which was not worth a reasonable good suit of cloathes. We were all flush and full of gold; For, having our diet gratis, and feeding on free cost, the money which we got, we never spent. We grew many of us to increase our talent, till it came to a good round sum; you shall hear what hapned in Florence to a poor man that died there, of the same time and standing with my self.

## CHAP. IV.

*Guzman recounteth the Ails of a famous begger in Florence, who at his death made the great Duke his heir; and how he was thrust out of Gaeta for his counterfeiting.*

**T**Here was a certain man, that was born neer unto *Genoa*, a person of great account, for his rare invention, and subtileness of wit. His name was *Pantalon Casteleto*, a poor begger, who, for that he was married in *Florence*, and his wife had born him a Son, the Father went plotting and devising, how he might leave him well to live, without tying him to serve any man, or to bind him prentice to any trade or occupation. They had (God be thanked) reasonable well where withall to live; they wanted nothing that they had need of, and sufficient store of wealth they had besides, to leave unto their heir, in some competent measure, especially for one that was of so mean a condition as he was.

But this man had entertained in his imagination, one of the greatest and most unnaturall cruelties, that the wit of man could devise. He maims me this his poor innocent infant; (as many do in those parts:) where when they be young and tender, they writhe their joynts, and break their bones, making them as pliable as Wax; then taking them in hand a new, molding them after this or that manner, as they have most mind unto, forming and fashioning of

*The story of Pantalon Casteleto, a Genouese, and poor begger in Florence.*

*The cruelty of a Father.*

them (I know not) into how many monstrous shapes, and ugly postures, only to move the people to take the more pittie and compassion of them.

With these abused Babes, whilest they are little, they get wherewithall to live in their old age; and afterward, thus maimed and mangled as you see, they leave them a good patrimony. But this wicked Rogue, for his greater increase of gain, would marturize this poor tender Infant, with new kind of torments; He did not put him to these cruel tortures all at once.

Some naturall gifts he had, that his Father either did not, or could not touch. So that notwithstanding this his unhappines, he had a very happy wit, and was a good speaker, and his words became him very well. But that which he had from his Father, which was his outward flesh: to begin first with his head, he had writh'd it in that sort, that it seemed to be set quite backwards, his face falling on t'other side upon his right shoulder. That both beneath, and above, the lids of his eyes, was all one over-grown lump of flesh: the fore-head and the eye-brows scorch'd and burned with a thousand wrinkles: He was crook-backt, his whole body like a bottom of Yarn, all one lump, without any shape or fashion, of any one part, that might stile him man: His feet turned backwards, and perching up over his shoulders, being dis-joynted, and withered. The onely sound parts that were about him, were his arms and his tongue. The one left him to talk, the other to take. He went, as if he had been clapt into a Cage, being thrust into a little kind of wooden Chest, set and made fast to a  
little

little Affes back, which he did rule and guide with his hands ; save that to get up or down, he was fain still to seek for some help, which he did seldom or never miss of, having one or other ever at hand for that purpose.

He was (as I told you before) a pleasant conceited fellow, had a good wit of his own, and many good things should you hear to come from him. Besides, he went so tatter'd, so torn, and in that ragged and wretched manner, that all Florence took pittie of him, & as well for his poverties sake, as for those good parts that were in him, they gave him much Alms, wherewith he was relieved.

After this manner, he lived some seventy and two yeares, or much thereabouts, at the end whereof he fell into a grievous sickness, whereof he certainly knew that he should die.

Seeing himself at this point, and that he now stood upon the jump of his Salvation, or condemnation ; being (as he was) very discreet, he began to consider a little better of the matter, thinking with himself, that it was no time now to jest, but rather to confess his sins, and to send for the Parson of the Parish, and so make his Will. Which as it was to be the last that ever he was to make, so was he carefull to make it as strong and as good as the strength of his wit could devise. He desired, that a known Confessor of his might be sent for ; one, that was a very learned man, and in very good esteem, as well for the honesty of his life and conversation, as for his learning and manners. With him he treated touching his sins, and fully imparted his mind unto him. And when he had communicated

municated what he thought fit unto him, he was very desirous to have his Will made, but with the shortest and most compendious words that possibly could be imagined. And the beginning being drawn, (which belonged to the publick Notary to do) what was fit on his part, he briefly thus set it down.

*Pantalons last Will and Testament.*

*The Duke made his sole heir and Executor.*

*Pantalon dies.*

*The Duke sends for his Legacy.*

*Imprimis*, I commend my soul unto God, who created it, and my body to the earth, to be buried in mine own Parish.

*Item*, My Will is, that my Asses be sold; which money shall be bestowed upon my buriall. But the Pack-Saddle I bequeath unto the great Duke my Lord and Master, to whom it rightly appertaineth, and properly belongs, whom I nominate to be my sole Executor, and make my general and universal Heir.

This done, after that he had settled and sealed this his last Will and Testament, of that his indisposition, anon after he died. And because every man held him to be a merry-conceited fellow, and one that was full of his witty jests, they did all verily think, that he would make his death equall with his life, and shut up his life with some odde jest or other for a farewell.

But when the great Duke understood of this Will, having formerly heard of the Testator, and that he was held to be a wise and discreet man, he did from thence collect, that this clause was not without its mystery. Whereupon he gave order that this Legacy he had left him, should forthwith be brought unto the Palace, and when he had it before him, he commanded it to be ripe in sunder, piece after piece, and still as they went along, they took forth divers different sorts of

coyn:

coyn:  
ral kin  
gold)  
(and a  
Crow  
Mara  
ful, a  
gave  
main  
gacy  
ed fo  
shew  
more  
V  
Beg  
Of  
wer  
us,  
V  
I in  
the  
of  
vic  
ou  
we  
su  
dr  
fe  
m  
fa  
n  
l

coyn: and when they had sorted out these several kinds of moneys (which were all in good gold) they amounted in the whole to three thousand and six hundred Spanish Crowns, every Crown bearing the full value of four hundred *Maravedis*. The great Duke being so powerful, and so noble a minded Prince as he was, gave order to have his Will entred, and to remain upon record to after ages, and that the Legacy that he had given him, should be employed for the good of his soules health; Wherein he shew'd himself a worthy Executor, but a far more worthy Gentleman.

What say you now to the feeling of this poor Begger? what think you of his sense of touching? Of these two Privileges (before specified) we were the sole and only Lords, for none besides us, did enjoy them so freely, as we did.

When I do but think upon those times, which I enjoyed heretofore, and the merry life that I then led, I take great delight in the remembrance of them. As that having of our Table still provided for us; our bed ready made to our hands; our Chamber without incombrance; our Scrip well furnish'd; our goods about us; our stocks sure on foot, without fear of thieves, or any dread of rain, without Aprill's care, or May's fearful jealousy, which two are the husbandmans moth: Not troubling our heads with new fashions, with the pomp of apparel, with ceremonious complements, and the like froth of fooleries scum'd out of forein Countries

If one speak much, (though never so well,) he is too lavish of his words; if little, he is too short and obscure, and knows not how to express himself.

self. If of high and dainty things indeed, he is too rash, and too presumptuous, and undertakes to discuss those things, that are too deep for his understanding. If of things of lesser consequence, and of a lower strain, he is too shallow, and hath no stuff in him. If he humble himself, he is base; if stand upon his worth, he is proud: if he will fight and take no wrong, he is ill govern'd, and a Royster; if pocket a wrong, and hold his hands, he is a coward: if he have a bold look, he is impudent; if a modest countenance, he is an hypocrite: if he laugh, he is condemned of levity; if grave, he is counted a *Se-turnist*: if affable, slightly regarded; if austere, mightily abhorred: If just, cruel; if merciful, a silly sheep. Onely against all these and the like the poor have a *Passé-port*, as being Lords of themselves, free from all taxes and tallage. They are out of the Gun-shot of their Competitors, they quietly injoy this life, without being troubled with promoting knaves to inform against them; snipping Taylours to take them short; or snarling dogs to snap at their good name.

Such was my happy condition, if time and fortune had not tumbled me down from this height of my happiness.

For, as I was sitting one day begging of alms, in the City of *Gaeta*, hard by the Church-porch, whither (out of curiosity) I would needs go to see if their charity and devotion did equall that of *Rome*? I here I sate bare, made shew of my head unto them, (for I was but newly come thither, and had not as yet fitted my self with necessities) so that I was forced on the suddain to make use of a kind of scurf, that I had clapt thereon

thereon  
excell  
Tow  
me, c  
With  
while  
when  
day t  
tion.  
on at  
me su  
than  
that  
W  
bega  
my  
with  
a gr  
read  
to to  
T  
Chu  
he v  
long  
to p  
wer  
he l  
from  
saic  
so  
plu  
lin  
fle  
at  
w

thereon; in the counterfeiting whereof I was excellent cunning. The Governour of the Town coming to Church, as he past along by me, casts his eye upon me, and gave me an alms. With this trick, I past reasonable well for a while. But because I had not the wit to see when I was well; I thought fit upon a Festival day to appear in publick with some new invention. I had my preparatives ready, my proviſion at hand, I ſet them before me, and then dreſt me ſuch a legge, that was very well worth more than a very good Vine-yard. This was the farm that I meant then to live upon.

Well, away go I to Church with it; there I began to ſtretch my throat, and to thunder out my voice, ever and anon liſting up the cloth with a tender finger, to ſhew unto them, what a grievous ſore legge I had, wherein I was ſo ready and ſo perfect, that I had need of no body to teach me my leſſon: but a Pox of all ill luck.

The Governour came that day unto the Church to hear Maſs, and becauſe he knew me, he will'd me to riſe, ſaying unto me: Come along with me, and I will beſtow a ſhirt on thee to put on thy back. I did believe him, and went along with him to his Lodging. But when he had me there, and ſaw I was ſafe from getting from him, he lookt me ſtedily in the face, and ſaid unto me, Thy colour being ſo freſh, thy ſkin ſo cleer, thy body ſo ſound (for thou art fat, plump, and fair, thy complexion good, thy limbs ſtrong, and the reſt of thy ſkin ſmooth and ſleek) how comes it to paſſe that this thy legge is at it is? Me thinks this doth not ſuit and hang well together with the reſt.

*The Governour of Gaeta cures Guzman of his ſore legge, and how he did it.*



I answered him, but with a troubled kind of delivery : Sir, I know not ; it hath pleased God it should be so. Presently he knew thereupon upon what leg I halted , he had found me out ; whereupon I had an eye to the door, to see if I could shew him my heels, and get away from him. But I could not, for the door was made fast. He willed a Surgion to be sent for, that he should search my wound, and see what I ayled. He came and lookt, and lookt upon it again and again, and at last very leasurcly and tenderly went to work with me, with a softe and gentle hand, as never a Lady in the land could more handsomely have gone about it. At the first it did somewhat puzzle him, for he knew not what to make of it, but within a little while after he saw his error, and then he told the Governour ; Sir , this Youth hath no more hurt in his leg, than I in mine eye, and that you may perceivc it is so, I will plainly demonstrate it unto you. With that he began to unswath me , and taking off rag after rag, and such slibber-slabbers as I had bedaubed it withal, he made my leg to appear as whole as any fish, as indeed it was.

The Governour blest himself, and stood amazed to see me in that manner, but that which did astonish him most, was how I should have the aptitude and wit to do such a thing as this. I was in a trance, and ready to swoon, not knowing what either to say or do. And if my youth had not born me out, none but God could have freed me from exemplary punishment.

But this youth of mine did reserve me for greater chastisement. And in stead of the shirt which he promised me, he sent for the Beadle of Beggers,

ger, and there (in his presence) willed him to give me a striped doublet, which I was to wear, under that torn one which I had to my back. Commanding me, that I should presently pack out of the City, and come there no more. Which command, though he had not laid it upon me, I should have been carefull to see it performed my self; for I would not have staid there if he would have made me Lord of *Gaeta*. I got me away full of fear, trembling, and quaking, shrinking up my shoulders, looking ever and anon behind me, being jealous and suspicious, that if they should chance to bethink themselves, that they had not given me sufficient payment, they would make after me, and bring me to a stricter account.

Hereupon I hastned away as fast as my legs would carry me, making no stay, till I came into the *Popes Territories*, Calling my *Rome* still to mind, and throwing a thousand blessings upon it; for there, they did not stick upon trifles, but let every man (without more ado) make the best of his living.

I no sooner came thither, but my tears trickled down my cheeks for joy. The first step that I set within those holy gates, I fell on my face, and kist that hallowed ground. And because that Country, which a man knows, and where he hath his means, the same is to be accounted his Mother, I did much joy to see it. I knew this City well, and was as well known in it. I began (as I had done before) to seek some course to live, and to maintain this life of mine.

I was stirring one morning betimes, according as I had formerly been accustomed, and trudg'd

Rome  
commen-  
ded by  
Guzman.

Guzman  
with much  
Joy arrives  
at Rome.

Guzman  
fals a beg-  
ging anew  
with his  
counterfeit  
sore leg.

trudg'd along with my sore leg, with which  
fat me down to beg at one of the Cardinals  
gates. And he conning forth for to go to the  
Palace, stay'd to hear me, in how loud a voice  
and extravagant a tune, I besought his pitty,  
saying; Give me somewhat (noble Christian, friend  
of Jesus Christ) take pitty of this sore afflicted sin-  
ner, maimed and pained in his members; Look upon  
these wretched limbes: consider my unfortunate  
years, and take some compassion of this miserable  
Creature! Oh my most reverend Father, my most  
noble LORD, shew some sense of Sorrow, have  
some little feeling, I beseech your most illustrious  
Lordship, of this poor young wretched Youth, and  
powr forth your Fatherly compassion upon such a  
pittifull piece of misery and wretchednesse, as you  
see here before you. I beg it at your noble and cha-  
ritable hands, in that glorious Name of the blessed  
(though most painfull) passion of our dear Majer  
and Redeemer IESUS CHRIST.

The Car-  
dinall  
takes pity  
of Guz-  
man.

My Lord Cardinal was extremely moved,  
and conceived an extraordinary pitty towards  
me, Thereupon he forthwith gave order to his  
servants, that they should take me up in their  
arms, and carry me into the house, and that  
stripping me of those old and rotten raggs, they  
should lay me in his own bed, and in another  
chamber adjoyning thereunto, they should make  
his. All which was done in a moment.

This holy man, sending presently for two  
skilfull Surgeons, and promising to see them  
well rewarded, committed my cure to their  
charge, and that they should do their best to  
make me a sound man. This care being taken,  
leaving me in the hands of these two hangmen,

To

To these two Surgions, it seemed at the first  
sight a thing of much moment. They threw  
off their Cloaks, they call'd for a pan of coals,  
fresh butter and other things; and when they  
had all that they would in a readinesse, they un-  
swathed me, and unbound the clouts that were  
about my leg, which they performed very neatly  
and handsomely. That done, they askt me how  
long I had this sore, if I could guess whence it  
should come; if I did use to drink Wine, what  
meats I did most usually feed on, and such other  
questions as these; which those that are skilfull  
in that art, are wont to do on the like occasi-  
ons.

All these I answered with silence, lying along  
as if I had been dead, for I was not almost my  
self, nor was I indeed for a pretty while, seeing  
such a deal of preparation to cut, to cauterize,  
and the like; and in case I should escape all this,  
I was at my wits end, to think that my malady  
would be found out, and so my roguery be dis-  
covered. That which I suffered in Gaeta, seem-  
ed but a flea-biting unto me. But now I li-  
ved in fear, that the Cardinal would inflict some  
notable punishment upon me, for this cheating  
trick that I had put upon him. I knew not how  
to help my self, nor what to do, nor whom to  
make use of in this my extremity. For, neither  
in all the *Letanie*, nor in *Flos Sanctorum*, could  
I find any Saint, that was a defender and Pro-  
tector of Villaines, or that would seek to excuse  
me.

By this time they had view'd me again and  
again, a hundred and a hundred times, and  
turn'd me to and fro, this way and that way,

Guzman  
would not  
answere to  
the questi-  
ons the  
Surgions  
aske him

that I thought they would never have made an end; when at last I brake forth and said, I am undone, I am undone; yet there is some life left in me: I die if you ask me any more questions, or if you meddle with me any more. One of them, (who was better experienced than the other) came to know at last, that this sore was a counterfeite sore, and that by the signes and Symptomes of it, it proceeded from the effects of that very self same Herb which I had used. But this he kept close to himself; telling his fellow, This flesh is canker'd all over, and therefore it is necessary, that to hinder it from spreading any farther, and that other new flesh may come up in it's place, to cut it all away to the quick, and then there was no doubt of the well curing of it.

The other said unto him; This cure will ask a great deal of time; all this filthy matter must be taken away, till we come to the very belly, as it were, wherein the very pith and Core of it lies, before we can well tell what to say to it. Howsoever, we have here a fair occasion offered to shew our skil, and to pick out something of it, for the better passing over of this hard year. He that was the more expert man of the two, took the other by the hand, and led him forth aside into a with-drawing room, that joyned close to the Chamber. I, when I saw them thus go forth together, stole me out of my bed after them, that I might listen to their talk, and it was my hap at last to hear the one of them say to the other; Master Doctor, I do think that your Woship doth not rightly and truly understand this young mans malady; for you shall  
 seldom

Seldome meet with the like kind of cures, and there is scarce one of a hundred, when they do meet with them, that doth know them, or can tell what to make of them, yet shall I acquaint you with what I know: we are Partners in this business, and therefore I will hide nothing from you; but it is a great secret, that I have to communicate unto you. What (for Gods sake) said the other? I shall tell you Sir: and with that he said, This begger is a notable dissembling Rogue, a subtile Villain; these-fores that you see, are feigned ware, counterfeit stuff. What shall we do in this case? Let me be advised by you. If we leave him off thus, the bird will escape our hands, and so we shall lose both the credit and profit of this Cure. If take upon us to cure him, we have no cure to work upon, and then this Rascal will befool us, and laugh at our ignorance: and if we cannot one way or other come off fairly to our best advantage, the best course will be (in my opinion) to acquaint the Cardinal how the case standeth, and what a counterfeit Knave we have under our hands.

No Sir (said the other) I hold not that so fit. Let us hold the Bird fast, while we have him: it is a lesse evill, that upon this young fellow (that is no way better than a *Picaro*, and an errant Rogue) we should gain us a little reputation, and come off with some good opinion, than to let slip so fine and so fair an occasion. Let us therefore take no notice of these his counterfeit fores, but rather lay some Playster thereunto, that may entertain and delay the time: And if need be, we shall afterwards apply some Corro-

*The wicked counsell  
of two  
Surgeons,  
about  
Guzmans  
sore leg.*

lives, that shall eat into the sound flesh, in the cure whereof we will spend some few daies. Nay then (quoth the other) the best way will be, Sir, (as I take it) to begin first with fire, cauterizing that part which appears thus infected.

Now, which of these two remedies they should first begin withall, as also how they were to share the gaines between them, a great quarrel there was, they could not agree about the point; for he that first found out the nature of my sore, would have the greater share, or else he would acquaint the Cardinal with the whole business.

When I saw upon what they stuck, and it was a matter of little or no moment, and that upon their difference, which was occasioned by my miserable poverty, I might run the hazard of my utter ruine, I rusht in between them, and throwing my self down at their feet, I said thus unto them: Gentlemen, on your hands, and tongues, depends my life, or death, my remedy, or my ruine. From my hurt, no good can come unto you; but from my good, you may reap assured both profit and credit.

I know you are not ignorant of the necessity and want which the poor suffer, and of the hardnesse of rich mens hearts, insonmuch, that to move them to the more compassion, and the easilier to get an Almes from them, we are enforced to wound our flesh, with these kinds of sores and martyrdomes, induring much trouble, and suffering much pain, yet neither these, nor greater miseries that we abide, are of power to prevail with them. It were a great misfortune in others to endure that out of necessity, which

which  
ferable  
thence  
pity  
throu  
and  
self;  
exige  
Do  
your  
and  
you  
led  
your  
trust  
then  
to y  
fici  
not  
for  
of u  
coo  
thi

an  
ve  
th  
ra  
ri  
w  
t  
h

which we willingly suffer, for that poor and miserable maintenance, which we draw from thence. I beseech you (for Gods sake) to take pity on me, seeing that you are men that run through the troublesome street of this world, and are made of flesh and blood, as well as my self; and that which hath driven me to this hard exigent, may likewise light upon your selves.

Do not (I beseech you) bewray me, work your will upon me, and wherein I may serve and help you, I will not be wanting to do as you will have me, and in all things to be so ruled by you, that you may gain much by this your cure. You may be confident of me, and trust me as you would your own lives; for if there were no other meanes to make me sure unto you, the fear of mine own punishment is sufficient of it self, to bind me to be secret. Nor let not the respect of gain restrain your kindnesse; for it is better to get, than to lose. We are three of us, let us all play booty and joy together to coozen the Cardinal; for he is rich, and something is better than nothing.

These intreaties, seasoned with a few tears, and uttered with that earnestnesse as I delivered them unto them, were sufficient to make them approve of my counsel; and so much the rather, for that they saw that I had hit the nail right on the head; Wherewith they were so well pleased, that they were ready for joy to take me upon their shoulders, to carry me to my bed. And so they and my self grew fully agreed to play every man his part as well as hee could.

Whilst this businesse was in debating, they



were so long before they could agree upon the matter, that I was scarce put into my bed, and the clothes cast upon me; but my Lord Cardinal was come to the Chamber door; who when he was entred, one of the Surgeons said unto him.

*The Surgeons dis-  
semble this  
counterfeit  
sore with  
the Cardi-  
nall.*

This young mans malady (may it please your Lordship) is a very grievous one, and we must necessarily apply great remedies thereunto. For the flesh is fester'd and canker'd in many places, and it hath taken such deep root, that it is impossible for the plasters that we are to apply, to work any good effect, without some long tract of time; but I am very confident, and dare be bold to assure your Lordship, that (by the help of God) we shall make him as sound a man, as ever he was in his life.

Then said the other; If this youth had not thus luckily fallen into your Lordships piteous and charitable hands, within a few daies, these his sores would have been so putrified, and have so corrupted the whole body, that all the world could not have sav'd his life, but he must have perisht and dy'd. But we shall so stop this Canker, from spreading it self any farther, and use such good meanes for his recovery, that I make no question, but within six moneths, if not sooner, his flesh shall come to be as whole and as fair as mine.

The good Cardinal (whom charity had only moved hereunto) told them; Be it in six, or in ten, let me have it thoroughly healed and cured as it ought to be cured, and I shall take order that you be provided of all things necessary for it, you shall want nothing. With this he left them

them, and with-drew hiimself into another room. This did put new life into me; and as if they had drawn my heart out of the one side, and had thrust it in on the other into my body again, so did I then feel my self. For even till that very instant, I did not rest assured of these two trayterous Surgeons. I still feared, they would have wheeled about another way, & have been the cause of my undoing. But by that which I had heard them treat in my presence, I was somewhat cheered, and began to be of good comfort.

But the custome of Swearing, Gaming, and Begging, are things that are hard to be left off. It could not choose but grieve me very much, that I was hindred in my course, mew'd up, debarr'd my liberty, and made unable to enjoy those good and plentiful Almes, which I gain'd by begging. Which losse notwithstanding did seem the lesse, in regard of that curious entertainment, choise diet, & good lodging that I had, that mans desire could not have wisht it to have been better. For I was waited on like a Prince, and cured with that care, as if I had been the Cardinall himself. And so had he given commandement to the servants of his house; besides his daily comming in his own proper person to visit me. And sometimes he would sit down and make some stay with me, talking of such things wherein he took pleasure to hear me.

At length being healed of this infirmity (when the Surgeons saw their time) they were dismissed, receiving a great deal of pay, for a little paines. And I was commanded to be new cloth'd, and to be list'd in the roll of the Pages; that as one of

them, from the time forward, I might attend, and wait upon his Lordship.

It was too great a leap, to rise from a *Ficaro*, to be a Page, I could not choose but grieve, as oft as I thought upon it. I was so far from liking, that it was rather to me a loathing. Such high places did not please me; Those that I had profest, those were for me; my Center was a good victualling house; my Circle, a good honest Tavern; and my end, Vice; whereunto I did bend amain; in that I took pleasure, that was health and life to me; and what was contrary to that, I took no joy in it, it was not for me, nor was I willing to make it mine.

*What  
Guzman  
did whilst  
he was a  
Page.*

My mouth was now daintily fed; my back delicately clad; my eyes swoln with too much sleep; my hands (for want of work) as soft as silk; my belly, (with too much pampering) as hard brac'd as any Drum; my buttocks brawny and thick-skind with too much sitting; and my chaps (like a Monkeys) nimbly walking on both sides, when I was at my meat. Tell me how was it possible for me to content my self; how endure to be put to a set Pension, to stay waiting all day long at a door, at nights to stand with a Torch in my hand, leaning against a wall, and standing upon one legge like a Crane, till it be almost day-break? Sometimes, (if not for the most part) supper-less, but frozen (I am sure) with cold, expecting the visits that go out, and come in, waiting upon my Lords Caroehe early and late; not only at some set seasons and certain times, but at all hours both of day and night, being mired in the Winter with durt, and choaked in the Summer with dust; holding a  
Trencher

Trencher between my thumbs at meals; Besides, Pages getting what they be going upon one Message, and returning with another, tying out my legges, and wearing out my shooes, and being allowed but every Moneth a pair, We were forced to go fifteen daies of the thirty bare-foot. And he, who at the end of the year shall ask us, How have you thriv'd this year? What have you got?

The answer is at hand, Sir, I rest upon my Lords love and favour, I refer my self to his discretion and goodness. I eat of his meat, and drink of his drink; in Winter feeding on that which is cold; in Summer, that which is hot. And what I have in that kind, is but a poor pittance, and that little, none of the best, and commonly some-what of the latest, that a man were as good go without it. I wear what cloathes he gives me, such as you see; as a Livery rather of my servitude, than of devotion to clothe me; not given me to keep me warm, but to do my Lord honour; And those too must be made to their mind, and our cost. So that our money pays for it, and they choose the colours.

Our greater gains did consist in cold fare, for there was not one of us that could finger a full Trencher: scraps, and picking of their teeth, we had in some abundance, and with these we entertained our selves, and the like poor Relicks that they left, and some refuse fruits, that were not worth the eating, and such things as these, or worse, were all the fruits of our labours.

When the wind blew fresh, we got a matter A matter of some eight pence or nine pence. of some ten or twelve *Quartos*, we rais'd this money out of so many drops and flakes of Wax, which

*A matter  
of some  
eight  
pence, or  
nine pence.*

which we took off from our Torches, which we sold to some old Cobler or other. I did make benefit of mine own Torch, or filch now and then from my fellows some of theirs, that was all that I did. And that I might still keep my hands in ure, I was evermore a practising upon some toys and trifles, petty things not worth the talking. The Devil (I think) brought Fools and block-heads to the Court.

There were Pages good store, but they were all Chips of the same block, a company of beetle-heads, dul-spirited fellows, had no sap in them; they were idle, retchless, careless, all set upon loytering, exercising neither their bodies, nor their brains, which made me the more willing to play the Wagge with them, and to put one pretty trick or other upon them.

I did store my self with Stockings, Garters, Bands, Hats, Handkerchiefs, Points, Cuffs, Shooes, and whatsoever I could rape or wring from them, which I hid between the straw of one of my fellows beds, because if any search were made, they should not find them in mine. I altered the properties of these things in an instant, they never lay long by thee, I would chop them for old Iron, rather than be troubled with the keeping of them.

Many of these waggish parts I plai'd, which were but tricks of youth and nothing else.

I was now grown so licorish, and so sharp-set upon sweet-meats to please my palat, that if I could but once come to set mine eyes upon such, or such a dainty, it was sure mine own, they rendered themselves into my hands, my hands turn'd them over to my mouth, & my mouth committed them

*Guzmans  
tricks be-  
ing a  
Page.  
Guzman  
hath a li-  
corish  
mouth.*

them close prisoners to my belly, where these sweets remained, till they were no longer sweet.

My Lord Cardinal had a great Chest of white Pine. This Chest stood in a with-drawing Chamber, for to *regalar*, and cheer himself withall, being full of divers sorts of Conserves; there I say, were your dry Suckets delicatly candied, your *Bergameta* Pear, your *Genoa* Cherry, you *Melon* of *Granado*, your *Sevillian* Cytrons, your Oranges, and Pome-Citrons of *Plasencia*,  
 your Lemons of *Murcia*, your pretty little Cucumbers of *Valencia*, your buds of the Islands,  
 your *Berengenas* of *Toledo*, your *Orejones* of *Aragon*, your *Potatas* of *Malaga*: besides a thousand several sorts of Comfits, and an infinite number more of sundry different kinds of Sweet-meats, which did disquiet my spirit within me, not suffering my soul to take any rest.

As often as he made any Collation, or did eat any of these things, he gave me the Key, himself standing by while I took them out, never trusting me with them alone by my self.

This distrust of his begot anger with me; and this anger, a desire of revenge. The Chest was a very great one, it was as white (if not more) than any paper, the bars and all the rest of the Iron-work about it, as small as your finest threads of Cambrick, curiously wrought, smooth and neatly polished, strengthened with good strong plates at the corners, set with studs very handsomely; the Lock stood in the midst, there being but one Key to open this sweet Paradise, and that was in my Lords custody. If thou know'st what it is to steal, or hast ever heard tell of it, or would'st  
 faint

*a A kind of fruit growing on the ground like a Melon, they are called Amor's poma, Love Apples, because they provoke a man to lust:  
 b A kind of dried Peaches, which steeped some four and twenty hours in Wine, are good meat.*

Guzman  
steales his  
Lords  
Sweet-  
meates.

faine learn how to rob a Chest; and to take what thou wilt out of it, without either falsifying of a Key, ripping open of a Lock, taking off the Hinges, or breaking up the Boards; Listen but to me, and I will tell thee how it may be done.

When it was my turn to wait, and my Lords occasions might promise me security, I had certain Iron tools in a readiness, which I had prepared of purpose, with the help whereof I did by little and little heave up the lid of the Chest, till I could thrust in a pretty little wedge of wood, and then heaving it up a little more, I did put in a round stick, about the bigness of the head of a reasonable good big Hammer, and this I went wrestling in by degrees, turning and winding it fair and softly towards the Lock, whereunto, the neerer and neerer still that it grew, the more and the more did it still heave up my corner, so that being (as I was) but a youth, and having a slender hand, and a small arm, I took out such Sweetmeates as I had most mind unto, wherewith I fill'd my pockets as full as ever I could stuff them: But when I could not reach now & then to those that were farther off, I did clap upon the end of a cane, or some little stick, two Pins, one having a sharp point, & the other made crooked like a hook, and by the help of these two, I brought them to me.

And thus I became Lord and Master of whatsoever was within the Chest, without the help of any Key; In which theft I carried my self so cunningly, that though I had stoln much, yet there was nothing found to be missing. At last I lighted upon a *Melacotone* of *Castile*, which being as fair, and as goodly a one (for it's greatness) as ever I saw in all my life, and gilded all

over,

# *The Life of Guzman*

81

over, my appetite was much provoked therewith, it seeming to be one intire piece of Gold, when I first tasted it: the relish whereof (me thinks) remaineth yet still in my mouth; me thought I never tasted any thing better, nor had I ever seen the like before.

Now, because this was a known piéce, when it was once discovered, that this curiosity was wanting, there was presently a general suspicion conceived; by some counterfeit Key. And this did much trouble my Lord the Cardinal, that he should have any in his house, that should dare to falsifie his Locks, especially in so private and secret a room as this was, which he reserved for his own use. Whereupon he forthwith called unto him his principal servants, to the end that he might search out the truth of this business. But as good luck would have, It fel out so happily, that all that I had stoln thence, was down my throat, and thoroughly digested, not any the least remembrance thereof remaining any more in my possession. Now my Lord had to his Steward a melancholy Chaplain, a fellow of an ill concoction, who wisht my Lord, that all his servants should be call'd together, and afterwards have them shut up in one Chamber, where they should be thoroughly examined, one by one, to see what could be got out of them, and that their Chambers likewise be searcht; for such a piece of work as this could not proceed from any man of reason, but from the lickorish mouth of some of his pages, or some other his younger Boys about the house, which had a sweet tooth in their head.

Well, we were all lock'd up close, like birds in a cage, but to no end and purpose in the world;



*In Spaine, all your sword blades are of one length, otherwise they be held unlawfull, and are forfeited to the Justice.*

world ; for they found us to be all true blades, not one false one amongst us all, but according to the right mark, just and even to a hair. This storm was over-past with us.

Well, I durst not for a pretty while after, put my hand to the Chest, nor once offer to cast so much as an eye towards it ; but those knavish tricks, which I had learned in my youth, were so deeply imprinted in me, that they could not be blotted out.

In a word, I must up into the Saddle again, though it cost me another fall. I could not choose but go visit my sweet friends, to see how they did.

One day then amongst the rest, when my Master was at play, I thought my Master could not but keep those Cardinals company, that were come in kindnesse to see him. This Chest stood in a by-room, within his bed-Chamber, much after the manner of a Closet.

Now, I had no sooner trust up my doublet, and tuckt up the sleeve of my shirt, and thrust in mine armes as far as I could reach, but my Lord had list to make water. Whereupon he rose up, & came into his Chamber, and not finding any of his Pages there, he went and took the Vrinall himself, which stood at his beds head, and whilest he was making water, it was my ill hap to hear him : which suddaine and unexpected accident did so startle and affright me, that going about to get out my arm quickly that I might not be taken in the manner making as it seemed more hast than good speed, my round Rouler fell tumbling on the floor, the Chest, that presently shute it self upon me. while mine arm

like

like a Sparrow in a Pit-fall, or a Mouse in a Trap, is taken prisoner, betwixt the sock and the lid, where it was held too fast to get forth in haste. At the noise of the fall, my Lord askt, Who's there? I could do no less than make answer to his call, but the Devil a foot that I could stir to come forth unto him. Thereupon he comes in, finding me upon my knees, stealing the Honey-combes out of his Hive. He demanded of me, what I made there? I confesse the whole matter how it was, and without any more ado, I told him the whole truth of the business. But when he saw how prettily I was taken, the more he look'd upon me, the more desire he had to laugh; and to make his mirth the fuller, he call'd to those that were in the next room at play, that they likewise might come and see, how the Bird hung by the wing, and could not get loose. When they saw how I was caught, they all fell a laughing, as though their hearts would have burst for want of breath; yet they had so much left at last, as to intreat his Lordship, that this fault might be forgiven me, as being the first that I had offended him in; and the rather, for that it is given to all youth, to have a licorish tooth. My Lord stood off, and would by no means be brought to yeeld; no intreaty would serve his turn, I must be whipt, there was no remedy, but I must be brought to the block.

Well, when they saw they could not procure my pardon, then they grew to a new consultation, touching the number of stripes. In the end, the number concluded on in this Conclave of Cardinals, was twelve, a full dozen, I was to have, neither more nor less. And the care of this

this payment was committed to Sir *Nicholas*, my Lords Secretary, my mortall enemy, who presently carried me away to his Chamber, and laid them on so soundly, and with so good a will, that for a fortnight after I was not able to sit upon my breech: but he did not go so clear away with this business as he thought he should, for it was not long ere I did cry quittance with him, and returned this payment seven-fold into his own bosome, so that he had no great cause, by that time I had done with him, to brag of his bargain. And that I may not delay any longer, this trick anon after I put upon him.

a Lat.  
Culex:  
A Gnat,  
which the  
Spaniards  
call by the  
name of  
Mosquito.  
They hum  
more, and  
sting and  
bite worse  
in that  
Country,  
than here  
with us,  
leaving  
knobs and  
bunches in  
the face.

My Gentleman was much troubled with (a) *Mosquitos*, which did so persecute him, that he could not sleep for them, All *Rome* did swarm with them, and in our house we had reasonable good store.

Whereupon, (hearing him complain much of them, and how he was bitten and vexed by them) I told him I would give him a remedy, which we did use in *Spain*, wherewithall to destroy this troublesome Vermine. He thank't me for it, and intreated me very earnestly, that I would do him the kindnesse to give it him. I told him that he should get him a good bundle of *Petroselinum*, and having steep't it well in good Vine Vinegar, he should put it at his beds head, to the smell whercof all the *Mosquitos* would come, whereupon, as soon as ever they lighted, they would presently fall down dead. He believed me, and presently puts it in practice. But when he was gon to bed, and had laid himself down to sleep, such a swarm of these buzzing busie Flies came flying about his ears all the night

night long, and did so plague and torment him, as if they had pull'd out his eyes with Pinchers, and held him by the nose with corn-tongs, as *Saint Dunstan* did the Devil.

Whil'st they were thus nibbling at his nose, eyes, and all the other parts of his face, he bestow'd a thousand buffets on his cheekes, thinking with those smart claps to kill these angry creatures; and perswading himself that they would die at last, when they lighted upon the receipt that was prepared for them, he past away the time as well as he could, until the morning.

But the next night after (because this remedy had not drawn only those of the house thither, but all the rest of the *Mosquitos* that were bordering there about) they did so be-peps him, that not only his face was most vilely disfigured therewith, but all the rest of the parts of his body, whereunto they were able to reach, were taken in that excessive manner, so be-pimpled, and so be-spotted, that he was forced to forsake his lodging, and to get him gone with all the speed he could.

*Guzman  
cries quit-  
tance with  
the Secre-  
tary.*

The Secretary was madded at the matter, and could have found in his heart to have kill'd me.

But my Lord, when he look'd upon this ill-favoured faced knave, and saw that he seemed so like a Leper (for he had not one free place about him, but like a Leopard spotted all over) and that I durst not appear for fear, but plaid least in fight, he was ready to burst himself with laughing, when he heard that I had put this jest upon him.

Whereupon commanding me to be called in,  
Ec when

when I came, he askt me, why I had offered the Secretary so great an affront, and thus plaid the wagg with him?

When upon I answered; Your Lordship may be pleased to remember, that you comminded him to give me a doozen lashes about the busi-ness of the Sweet-meats. His Commission reacht no farther. But I remember very well, how he then us'd me. For what he gave me in gross, I told out by retayl, one by one, as a matter much importing my posteriors. Besides, I know it was not your Lordships pleasure (as a thing contrary to your mild and gentle disposition) that they should be the stripes of death, but such as my tender years were able to bear. But *Domine Nicolao*, my Worshipful good friend Sir *Nicholas*, gave me twenty good sound lashes, the last being more cruel than the first. And so, having exceeded not only his Commission, but common humanity, I thought I had just cause to cry quittance with him: And thus you see (whereat I hope your Lordship will not be offended) I have revenged the Wheales on my breech, by returning them on his face. He was the man that stung me, and I got other to sting him. And I hope, my Lord, this is but one for another. Only the difference is, that he did prosecute this sute against me in his own person, and I against him by my Attourney.

But by reason of my former bold attempt, I was not only beaten, but banished from the service of his Lordships Chamber; I waited in the mean while (during this his displeasure) upon his Lordships Chamberlain.

Guzman  
banished  
the Car-  
dinals  
Chamber.

## CHAP. V.

*Guzman revenges a trick which the Secretary had put upon the Chamberlain, whom he then attended. He is received again into the Cardinals service. And how finely he cozened him of a Barrell of Conserves.*

**M**Y new Master was a merry pleasant Gentleman, without any gall or malice in the world, set all upon sport and good fellowship, there was no harm in him in the earth, no fraud, no deceit; but was a man of the old making, an honest true *Troian*, without any tricks or ligges, just in his dealings, and as plain as a Pack-staff. I knew no fault in him, unlesse it were a little Cholerick. Whereunto I may ad his over-jealous and suspicious nature. Quit him of these two qualities, and there was not a fairer condition'd man to converse withall, if you would have sought a whole Country.

This *Bonus Socius* had but poor Parents to whom he daily sent his own allowance, and now and then he would either dine or sup with them, as he did the night he came not home half well, and complaining of the craziness of his stomach, he went directly to his Chamber, and got him forthwith to bed.

Now his Lord, missing him at supper, asked for him: They told him how it was with him. He sent one of his Gentlemen to visit him, and to bring him word how he did.

*The jest  
that the  
Secretary  
put upon  
Guzmans  
Master.*

The morrow after I went to the house of his parents, with some provision for their dinner, one of my fellows remaining with him.

The Secretary, as soon as he was up and ready, went towards his Chamber, and meeting with my fellow, who was there ready at hand, waiting when he should be call'd for, ask'd him, how his Master did? He made answer, that his Master was newly fallen a sleep, and that he had not taken one hours rest all that night, but that now (God be thanked) he slept soundly, and well hoped that the worst was past.

It is well (said the Secretary) & seeing it is so, 'tis pitty to wake him; but in the mean while, till he be ready to rise, (which I presume will not be with the soonest) I prethee let me intreat thee to go a little way with a servant of mine, to help him to bring home a certain commodity for me, which he cannot well do alone, and make all the hast I pray that you can, for I will tarry here till you come, lest your Master might chance to wake and call for you. The young Lad did as he desired, and went his way.

The Secretary, taking hold on this occasion, dresses me a pretty Youth in womans apparel, attired in the habit of a Curtizan, and places this boy softly and secretly behind his bed. Now this honest man was all this while fast a sleep, and the enterance was free and open unto him, whilst the Secretary, for the more surety, went in first himself without being heard; and afterwards taking this Youth by the hand, led him softly along, and there he hid himself close behind the bed, as he had been before instructed, and there he remained quiet, not so much as offering once to stir.

*This*

This being done, the Secretary went forth, and going to seek out his Lord, he found him a walking, saying of some prayers to himself, as his manner was; who as soon as he saw him, his Lordship demanded of him, how the Chamberlain did? Who told him, I enquired thereof but now, and his servant told me, that he had not been well all this night; And I do not much marvel at it; for being with him last night, before I went to bed, to see how he did, I talk'd unto him, but he thought he answered me with an ill will. What ailes him, I know not. There is something in it more than ordinary, whatever it be; farther I cannot inform your Lordship.

The Cardinal (who was charity it self) presently thereupon made hast to visit him. And when he had set himself down by him, close to his beds head, the youth comes me out from behind the hangings of the bed, and cries out; Woe is me, most wretched and unfortunate Woman, what shall I do? Pardon me (good Sir) for I must be gone, for it is late, and I am afraid my husband will misse me. And with that, she went her way, passing through the midst of all the Cardinals servants, attending there upon his Lordship.

The Cardinal, who thought him to be a Saint, began to blesse himself, and was much amazed thereat. And the Chamberlain, he on the other side, was much astonish'd, taking it to have been some vision, or strange Apparition. He crosses himself, then cries out, *Iesus!* the Devil, the Devil: and therewith leapt out of his bed in his Shirt, running up and down the room, as if had been out of his wits, Ec 3 The



The Secretary and some others, that were privy thereunto, fell a smiling, and had much ado to forbear laughing out-right; whereby the Cardinall perceiv'd, that it was meerly a jest, and they did not stick to confesse as much, telling the whole truth of the matter, and how it was carried.

But the Chamberlain could no stand still, but ran up and down from place to place, not knowing which way to turn himself. And albeit they did all labour to quiet him, yet for all that they could do, they could not in hast bring him to himself again: but was much abashed, and mightily ashamed of his scoff and jest that was put upon him; and the more, for that it was in the presence of his Lord. The Cardinall went away blessing himself, and laughed heartily as he went along at this conceited merriment.

Now, by that time I was come back, all this business was over past: But I was as sensible of it, as if they had given me so many stripes. And the Chamberlain said unto me; What thinkest thou (*Guzmanillo*) of the wrong that these Villaines have done me? To whom I made answer, They have done well, Sir, & plaid their parts with you very finely, what would you more? But if they had us'd me so scurvily as they have done you, I verily perswade my self, that his Holiness should not need to injoyn them any penance for this offence; nor would I leave it to mine Heires in my last Will and Testament to repay this debt, but would quit scores with them my self, and pay them home with advantage: my Lungs were ready to leap out of my throat, out of a desire they had to vent something but I was

tender

tender to touch upon that string, as being loth to advise and counsell him what to do. But being often importuned by him, he making me great offers and large promises, giving me besides to understand, that the Cardinall should know, that it was a Child of my own begetting, and the workmanship of mine own hands, in defence of him who was then my Master, I resolved with my self to enter into the Action, and to undertake this businesse in his behalf, and to be sole plotter and contriver thereof my self.

When I found (as I thought) a fit time, and that the Ordinary Post of *Spain* was to depart, the Secretary was very busie about his dispatches which required hast; I bought me then a little Rosin, Frankincense, and Mastick, I pounded it, and sifted it altogether, till I had wrought it fine, and as small as any Meal. The Secretaries servant was that morning busied about his Masters clothes, brushing and making of them clean with all the speed he could; To him go I, telling him, Doeſt thou hear (honest *Jacobo*) I am *Guzman* come to tell thee, that I have a dainty piece of Bacon on the Spit, it is now ready, bread I have likewise provided, there is nothing wanting but Wine, if thou wilt find that, thou shalt have share with me; if not, pardon me, for I shall seek out one that will. He quickly reply'd, No, (good *Guzman*) no, do not so, for I will give thee Wine to it. Go to then (quoth I) stay thou here; for I will presently be with both it, and thee.

Whilest that he went to the Dispense for Wine, I took forth my paper of Powders, and turning the inside of the Breeches outward, I

be-sprinkled them with a little wine, which I carried about me in a little round glasse Viall, & threw good store of these my prepared Powders upon them: which, when I had done according to my mind, I turned the Bretchees again, putting them just in the same order they were in, when the Youth left them. He returned anon after with a good Jarre of Wine, and before he could speak unto me, his Master call'd for him to come in, and bring him his clothes, for he would rise. He left the Wine with me, and I him within. Where they were both so busie about their Papers, that it was noon before they had dispatch'd, and were ready to come forth. The Secretary was a very hayrie man of his body; and the powders began to play their part, and to work their effect. The Dog-daies were then come in, and with the extremity of those heates, they wrought so upon his body, that from the girdle downwards he was as if it had been a Scar-cloth of Pitch, which clung so close unto him, and was grown so stiff withall, that he was terribly tormented therewith, for every hair did give him such a twinge when he did but move, or when with some suddain reach they did rend and unroot themselves from the flesh, that the tearing of every several hair seemed unto him, the plucking out of so many eyes out of his head.

When he saw in what case he was, he began to call his people about him, to know the cause thereof, but none of them could tell, nor were able to answer to that account, till that the Chamberlain came in, and told him; Sir, this is *Quid pro quo*; one for another; *Qui moccas moccabitur.*

moccabitur

This,  
our of hi  
you may  
is but bl  
Venew,  
in Shake

Well  
that th  
cutting  
for tw  
the eno  
come

Th  
it wa  
closer  
the co  
ever

T  
past

I ret  
the  
as b  
still  
nee

tha

we

sta

co

C

fr

t

t

*moccabitur.* Harm watch watch, harm catch.

This, Sir, is called the beating of the Vencer out of his School. You see, for all your cunning, you may take a knock as well as another man. It is but blow for blow; you have given me one Venew, and I have given you another. And let us shake hands and be friends.

Well, (and to be brief) the jest ended in this, that they were fain to get a pair Sizars, and go cutting hair after hair, which was work enough for two of his servants, and yet were forced in the end to unrip his Breeches that they might come the better to clip away the haire.

This jest took better than the former, because it was a little tarter than the other, and stuck closer unto him. By vertue of this, I received the confirmation of my knavery, and was taken ever after for the same man I was.

Two monthes of my banishment were now past and gone. After which expiration of time, I returned again to my former Office; but with the same little modesty, and fear of doing evil, as before. I had certain sweet guts in my belly still; I would have ventured the breaking of my neck from the top of (a) *Santo Angelo*, rather than I would not down to steal them, if they were to be had; it was impossible for me to abstain from being in action; I was not able to contain my self. Happen what may happen, Come what will come, all was one to me. I said to my self, *Andaces fortuna juvat*; Fortune befriends brave spirits. Let the worst come to the worst, fall back, fall edge, I am sure to pay for it only in my person, and not in my goods, either moveable, or immovable, for it was

Guzman  
recei-  
ved again  
into the  
Cardinals  
service.

(a) A  
Castle in  
Rome.

was not Gods will that I should have any land of mine own, or many movables. My Lord was a great lover of your moist Suckets, and such liquid Conservees as they use to bring from the *Canaries* in little barrels, or from the Islands of the *Terceras*; which barrels, when they are empty, were thrown aside, and no reckoning made of them, lying here and there in every corner, as good for nothing. I had got

(a) Arroba, is five and twenty pound weight. me one of these, containing about half an (a) Arroba, which served me instead of a Trunk, wherein I kept my Cardes, my Dice, Garters, Points, Cuffes, Handkerchiefes, and other things befitting a poor Page.

The Cardinal (as he was sitting one day at dinner.) commanded his Steward, that he should go among the Merchants, and buy him some three or four (b) Quintals, of those that were the newest and freshest, and but lately brought in. When I heard him say so, I began presently to cast about with my self, How I might make my self Master of one of these Barrels. The Cloth was taken away, the Cardinall risen, all gone to dinner: and whilst they were busie at their victualls, I got me into my Chamber, and in the twinckling of an eye, before you could well say This, I clapt me within that Barrel which I had, as many old rags, dust, gravel, or whatsoever trash came first to hand, till I had fill'd it brim-full, and thrust it down as hard as I could for my life, to make it lie the closer. This done, on went the head, then the hoopes, making all fast & sure, so that it was now as handsomly fitted up, as heart could wish, & no man that should have seen it, but would have sworn (it was so artificially

any My cially handled) that it had been newly brought from the Indies.

When I had trimm'd it up, and made it neat and fit, I let it alone, having still an eye, and standing as Sentinel, to watch what success this project of mine might take.

Now, about the Evening I did descry two *Azemilas* which came along laden with Conserve, who were no sooner entred within the doores, but they were eased presently of their burthen. The Steward commanded the Pages to carry them into the Cardinals lodgings.

I took one of the Barrels, and laid it upon one of my shoulders, as the rest of my fellows did; but lagging a little behind, giving them leave to go before me, as soon as I was come right over against my own Chamber door, I suddenly slipt in, when I saw the coast was clear, and took out that other which I bare to my Lords lodging; and so I made my three returns, giving a good account of all my lading.

Guzman  
plot to play  
the beef,  
his crafty  
and cunning  
carriage.

When the last was come up, I stood very soberly in the Hall where my Lord Cardinal was, who said unto me, What think you of this fruit (*Guzmanillo?*) you cannot put in your hand here, your Wedges will not serve your turn. I replied to that point, and told him; My good Lord, if one thing will not do the deed, another must. And though my Arm cannot get in, my hand may, and that's enough for me, I will desire no more.

Very good Sir (said my Lord) but as they are now, neither your arm, nor you hand will stand you instead.

There

There lies the skill, quoth I to my Lord; for if they were otherwise easie to be opened, I would not care a button for them, there is no pleasure in such a purchase. In matters of difficulty, your good wits come to their tryall, which onely shew themselves in things of great importance, and not in driving a nayl into the wall, or pulling on of a pair of shoes, things easie to be done.

Say'st thou me so (quoth my Lord?) well, I will once set your wits a working. If within these eight daies you shall shew your self so nimble witted, as to steal one of these from me, I will bestow it on thee for thy labour, and thou shalt have another besides into the bargain: but if thou shalt fail therein, thou shalt then bind thy self to receive such punishment, as shall be agreed upon.

My Lord, said I; Eight daies? Why, eight daies is a mans life; it is time enough of conscience. The businesse will be too long a doing; and it may be, by putting it off to so large a time, we may either grow cold in the bargain, or the memory of it dye, and be no more thought upon.

I accept the favour offered me by your Lordship, and if to morrow by this time I shall not finish this businesse, I shall willingly resigne up my self into the Secretaries hands, to be punished at his discretion; because I assure my self, that he would willingly have the tawing of me, that he might revenge himself upon me for the late passage that I put upon him to his great grief: for the sent of the pitch is not yet gone from him, nor his haire come again.

My

My Lord laught, and so did they that were about him. And thus the bargain was driven between us for the next day following. I could if I would have presently cleared my self of this debt, but I was willing to let the bond run on, till the time it was due.

The boord was covered, and my Lord was now set down to dinner, feeding on such things at first, which I brought in, to procure him the better appetite to his meat; and looking me in the face, he smilingly said unto me, *Guzmanillo*, it is but a little now to night; That come, your time is past. What will you give me now to be freed of your bargain? Master *Nicolao* hath rods in pisse for you, and is provided for your payment. And me-thinks that he is plotting how he may be revenged of thee, and thou, how thou maiest satisfie thy self upon him. If I might advise, my counsell should be, that he should not deal with thee, not so much for thy sake as his own. Whereunto I answered; I am sure (my Lord) that my punishment is in the Secretaries hand; But I am not yet sure that the Conserves are in mine: Yet if I had store of moneey to set upon this cast, and had ought to lose more than the poorenesse of my person, I would venture it all for this once, because I am very confident of my Chance.

Thus dinner past on till the last course was almost ended, and ready to be taken away; at which time I went to the Court-cupboord, and taking from thence a Silver-Plate, I fill'd it with the Conserves of that barrell which I had stoln, and therewith I came to the Table, and set them down before his Lordship.

When



When my Lord saw what I had brought him, he blest himself, and began to wonder much at the matter, for he had the barrels in his own custodie, He would trust no body with them. At last he calls the Chamberlain unto him, and wills him to go in, and count the barrels, and see if any of them were opened, or ill conditioned.

He went in, and finding them both in number and place, to be just the same as at their first putting in, he came forth again, and told his Lordship the tale was whole and intire, not a barrell missing, and that they were sound and well-conditioned, and not the least suspicion to be had (for ought that he could perceive) amongst them all, not so much as the least hair of his head. Ah, ah, ah, said my Lord, this trick will not serve your turn; this is a very poor one. Thou would'st make us believe, that thou hast taken that out of one of the barrels, which thou hast bought with thy money.

With that he turned himself towards the Secretary, and told him, *Domine Nicolao*, I assigne *Guzmanillo* over unto you, to do what you list with him, and to punish him as you think fit, for that he hath lost his wager.

The Secretary made answer, May it please your Lordship to take the correction of him into your own hands, and to dispose of him as you please; for I for my part will have no more to do with him, I will not come near him, nor his shadow; I dare not; I have had too much of him already: And if I should now tickle upon a new score, and make him pay for the old and this together, I should get nothing by the reckoning; for I hold him to be of that unhappy  
and

and dangerous, both wit and nature, that he would in revenge, convey the next time a nest of Hornets into my breeches, or some other venomous vermine, that should either poyson me, or sting me to death. And therefore if your Lordship put him over to me, & leave his punishment to my discretion, I freely absolve him thereof, and am willing to imbrace his friendship.

I have not as yet (said I) offended in that degree, that I had need of absolution. I am as good as my word, and have performed what I promised; the wager is mine, I have wonne it. And if this be not true that I speak, and that I make it not plainly to appear unto you, punish me at your pleasure, I ask no favour at your hands. *De que sirven las palabras, donde ay obras?* What need words, where there are works? I say, and say it again, and that confidently, that this Conserve is of that which was brought in yesterday, and not only this, but a whole barrell thereof is now at this present whole and untoucht in my Chamber, save this little that I have set before his Lordship.

The Cardinall crost himself, and wondred how this should be. And untill dinner was done, and the table taken away, he did nothing else but blest himself with both his hands. And being desirous to be certified of the truth thereof, he rose up, and went into his lodging, to be an eye witness of it himself. He lookt upon all the barrells, whereon he had certain markes, he found them faithfull and true, the number full and just, the key in his own custody, and could not devise how this should be:

Hereupon he did verily believe, that I had  
his

bought a barrell of the very same Conserves, as his were, and said unto me; *Guzmanillo*, dost not thou thy self know, that thou broughtest in thus many hither? count them now, and see if they be not right. I did so; And when I had done telling, I told him; My Lord, here is the full number, *Pero de lo contado, come el lobo*. But it is like the Shepherds number of his sheep; whereof, when he hath cast up his reckoning, he shall find that the Wolf hath meet with one of them by the way. I see they are well, but not all so well as they should be. And that you may see I tell you no lie, let that be brought hither which is in my Chamber, and let this be opened that stands there, and you shall find that I have changed the one for the other.

They opened it, whereby they discovered as well the truth, as the wit I had used therein. For the dust, the gravell, the old rags, and the like trumpery which I had fill'd it; withall, did manifest as much.

They remained all, as men amazed, not knowing what to think of it, nor being able for their lives, to imagine how this should be brought about. They did all ask me the question, but I would not acquaint any of them with it: But presently besought his Lordship that he would be pleased to perform his promise with me. He did so. So that I had that and one more, which were two in the whole.

And because they should know that I carried a Noble mind, as it was delivered to me with the one hand, so I gave it with another to my fellow-Pages, who divided it amongst them. And howbeit my Lord was somewhat offended

at

at the  
more w  
better c  
much a  
mine,  
away,  
and the  
now c  
fortun  
mean  
mine  
and I  
less ha  
throu  
of th  
a Ver  
as of  
visit  
not st

Guz  
fr  
u  
o

M  
by  
a v  
mo  
fre

at the fineness of my theft, yet he did much more wonder at my liberality, and thought the better of me for this my free disposition. He was much afraid of these cunning & subtil tricks of mine, and questionless would have then put me away, but that he was so good and holy a man; and therefore considered with himself, If I should now cast off this young fellow, some great misfortune would befall him, by reason of his mis-de-meanour. These things hee hath done here in mine own house, are but idle tricks of his youth, and I am ne'r a whit the poorer for them. It is less harm that he should hurt me in a little, than through want, offend others in much. And out of this apprehension, he did make of this Vice a Vertue. He made himself merry with it: And as often as any Princes and great Lords came to visit him, as occasion was offered, hee would not stick to make report thereof unto them.

---

CHAP. VI.

*Guzman telleth of another theft of Conserues; Distaffs, being a Page; Recounteth the tricks he used at Primera, and how for playing he was put out of the Cardinals service.*

MY Lord did desire so much my amendment, He sought to oblige me unto him by love, And for to try, if he could reduce me to a vertuous course of life, and that he might remove from me all occasion of longing, he fed me from his own Plate, with all the choicest dainties

F f

and

and delicacies, and with all manner of sweet Meats: telling me in gentle tearms, *Guzmanillo*, I give thee this in token of peace and amity: Behold I, as well as my Secretary, will hold no contention with thee. Hereby I acknowledge my self to be thy Vassal, bestowing this upon thee by way of Tribute.

There were brought to my Lord from *Genoa* certain Boxes of Conserves, very great and large, which Boxes upon the way had taken a little wet. I was not in the house when they came, and while I was lacking, they entred before my return into a consultation, what they should do with them, and how, and where they were best to dry them, that I might not seize upon them: as soon as I came in, his Lordship call'd me unto him, and said; *Guzmanillo*, what were we best to do with these Conserves, which are come thus wet, that we may preserve them from being spoyl'd? The best course (my Lord) said I, in my poor opinion, is to eat them presently; but my pleasure is (said he) that thou look unto them, and keep a true reckoning of them, laying them out every day abroad in the Sun. And here is no evasion for you, for they shall be delivered unto you by tale, and by tale I will look you shall return them unto me, if any harme come unto them, or ought be missing, I shall call you to account for it.

I told him, that I was neither Master of my self, nor them; I had no power over my self; and that I was one of *Eves* sons; & that being put into such a Paradise of Conserves, the Serpent of the flesh might tempt me to eat of this forbidden fruit.

His Lordship reply'd, See (*firrah*) that you look

look well to your charge; for I will expect, that you give them me, as I gave them you: I must not have a piece missing, neither in number nor in weight, quality for quality, quantity for quantity, all whole and sound, or else you shall see what will come on it, and therefore I would wish you to look well what you do, and to use your best care,

I then made bold to tell him; The Plea (my Lord) that is between us, depends not on this point; this is not the hinge whereon it hangeth; For to return them unto you as they are, without finding any missing, or perceiving any hurt they have taken, that is a very easie thing, I can do that presently. But it is another point (my Lord) that I stand upon. What point I pray (say's my Lord?) I told him, I put my self into great perill; for I am privy to mine own inclination & weakness, therefore (to deal plainly with your Lordship) if you will have me to comply with your Lordships command, if my life lay on it, I shall not be able to hold my hands, I must needs tast of them, if not fill my belly.

Well (quoth he) seeing it will be no other wise, I will for once make tryall how discretly you will behave yourself; I shall see by this what manner of man you be. I give thee therefore free liberty, that thou eat as much as thou hast a mind to for once, and no more, and that one time, I allow thee to fill thy belly as full as thou wilt thy self; but with this condition, that thou deliver thereof up afterwards unto me, without any defect or fault; and thereupon they were all delivered up into mine hands.

The next day following, I laid them out

the Sun, in an open walk, and amongst the rest there was one of the flowers of Oranges and Limons, which offered it self to my view, it looked very lovingly upon me, I took it in my hand, and with a little knife that I had about me, I took out almost the one half, putting in place of the Conserves so much wast Paper, cut out so just to the same measure and proportion, that no man was able to perceive it.

My Lord that night being minded to make a Collation, I brought to his boord four of the said Boxes, and asked him when I set them down, whether I had not looked well unto them? He told me, if the rest be like unto these, he was well contented with them. Whereupon I brought them all before him, and he was very well pleased when he saw them, because they were much dryer than they were before, and better conditioned. With that I presently stept aside, to go fetch a Plate, and on it I brought him all that I had stoln; for in very deed I had not tasted thereof the quantity of a Nut, having only done it for the ostentation of my wit.

When he look'd upon it, he ask'd me; What's this? I told him; I now divide with your Lordship, part of my theft. He reply'd; I will'd thee, that thou shouldst fill thy self, and not filch. And therefore now you have lost.

I answered, I have neither fill'd my self with it, nor so much as tasted what it is, nor do I think that I have lost by doing of this; for this is that, wherewith I mean to fill my belly. Besides; all that was stoln out of the Box, is yet whole, and intire, as you may well perceive; but

but if, because I have shew'd my self honest, I must suffer for it, which way shall I walk to go right? My punishment doth not trouble me, nor does it grieve me that I have lost, as long as I am perswaded I have won, hoseover I may be overborn. But I will be wiser the next time, and be sure to lose no more upon the like match.

Nay (*Guzmanillo*) be not angry (said my Lord) I would not thou shouldst grieve or complain for this, I confess I have done thee wrong, and have blamed thee without a case; but I pray thee tell me (said he) out of which of all these Boxes did'st thou take this forth? I put forth my hand, and told him; This is it (my Lord) and I shew'd him how and which way I did it.

He was well pleased at the subtileness of my wit, but he was afraid, lest one time or other, I would mis-employ it to my greater hurt. He willed me to take the Box notwithstanding for my paines, and to carry it away with me.

Many such things as these came from me; and he took pleasure both in them and me, as being flights of the hand, using these juggling trickes more for sport than harm. Our exercise, was every day two houres in the morning, and two in the evening, to hear our School-master read unto us, of whom I learned (for the time I stude there) the *Latine* tongue, which I had reasonably perfect: I had a little *Greek* too, and some *Hebrew*. The rest of that vacant time, which we had from serving our Master, we bestowed in reading of Books, telling of tales, and in gaming. We would go a nights to play the waggies with the Curtizans, and to exercise our



*The di-  
states that  
Guzman  
had, whil'st  
he was a  
Page-*

*Guzmans  
tricks at  
Primera.*

wits upon them, and to sing songs at their doors, and thus I did spend my time away, till my beard began to bud.

This life was to me as if I had been ty'd to a stake, with a collar of iron about my neck, exposed to shame; none of these things could content me; night and day did I sigh for the losse of my former delights.

When I once began to write Man, I fell to gaming, even to the losse of my clothes from my back.

I made it my study, to benefit my self by all tricks & cheating devices, that I could invent or learn; & especially when I plaid at *Primera*. How often when I went upon two Cards, would I take three, and conveying five now and then into my hand, would set up my rest upon the three best? How often would I take the last Card, and clapping it underneath, would see whether it were good for me or no, & in an instant look on the other already seen, and then make my best advantage of them, which was all one, as if I should have robb'd a man upon the high-way? How often would I have a friend sit by me, which should seem as if he were asleep, and would supply me with Cards under the board to serve my turn? How often had I a Copes-mate that stood by looking upon the others games, who would tell me what Cards they went upon, and what their game was? all which he signified unto me by such secret and cunning signes, that it was impossible for them to find it out. How often would I so set and pack the Cards, that I would deal to him that plaid against me two and fifty, and having an Ace to help me, would make my self

Self five and fifty, or else with a five encounter  
four and fifty, and so either win the Game by  
one-peep, or by the elder hand?

Now when we were two against one, and  
plaid bootie, and dealt the cards one to another,  
how often taking by the discarding Card, and  
clapping it on the top, would we play on till we  
could make our advantage of it? how by a  
beck or a nod, did we know how the world  
went? how to shuffle and mix the Cards so, as to  
make our game sure? how to set some privy  
mark or signe upon them, whereby to know  
them? how to know them by the corners, being  
bigger or lesse, and a thousand the like, which  
we made good use of, either by the help of a  
stander by that shared with us, or by corrupting  
him that sold the Cards, which are ordinary  
things? O! how many lewd pranks did I play  
in that kind? how many rogueries? how many  
villanies? there was not that one cheating or  
coozening trick, which I was not acquainted  
withall, and had it at my fingers ends. And  
as I was perfect in the knowledge of them, so did  
I put them in practise when time served.

Well, I was so wholly given to gaming, and  
spent so much time therein, that I committed  
many faults.

My Lord was grieved thereat to the very soul,  
nothing could prevail with me, neither admon-  
itions, nor perswasions, nor words, nor promi-  
ses, to remove this evill custome from me. And  
seeing that I could not be reclaimed by fair  
means, his purpose was by some one device or  
other to bring me to be a reformed man. And  
the plot was, that by discharging me from his

service, and putting me out of his house for some certain daies, it might be, that calling my lewd courses to mind, and seeing mine own errors, in the end, I might come to a truer feeling of my misery, and by that means be drawn to amendment of life: yet would he not, that my allowance should be taken from me, lest for want of means, I might through necessity be driven to do some dishonest act or other.

Well, I was driven by this means to my shifts, and wanted meat to put in my mouth.

*Guzman  
plaies a-  
way his  
cloathes.*

This misery befell me, and that in a very troublesome time: for having spent a whole day and night in play, and having lost all the money that I had, and when that was gone, all my clothes, having nothing left me to cover my nakednesse, but a poor thin Doublet, and a pair of white linnen Drawers, when I saw my self in this poor taking, I retyred my self into my Chamber, not daring for shame to come abroad.

And albeit I would willingly have feigned my self sick, I could not do it; for my Lord was so carefull of his servants health, and that they should have all things necessary and fitting for them, that he would presently have sent for Physicians to see what I ailed. Besides, I saw it was a needless remedy, to use any such dissimulation; for by this time it had past from mouth to mouth, how, and in what case I was, and what was the cause of my grief.

Now though that I had been wanting so many daies from the service of his table, yet would he still ask and inquire what was become of me, and where I was that I did not wait? He began shrewdly to suspect, lest some mis-fortune had

befaln

besain me. And therefore pressing the servants hard to acquaint him where I was, and how I spent my time, they were forced (for the giving of his *Lordship* satisfaction) to deliver unto him the truth of the businesse.

This did much afflict his *Lordship*, when he saw how without either fear or shame, I proceeded on in my lewd courses. Whereupon, to put his former project in practise, he gave order that I should have some new Clothes made me, and that then they should presently dismisse me, and rid me out of both his house and service, accordingly as he had formerly ordered the businesse.

So his Steward cloathed me, and then turned me out of doores. Which I took in that foul scorn, that in a kind of sullen & doggish fashion, I left the house, with a full resolution never to return thither again, of all other places in the world notwithstanding that I had received many messages by several messengers, with many goodly offers, and fair promises, delivering me the end why all this was done. They also signified unto me how much his *Lordship* lov'd me, & what he had spoken of me in my absence. But all would not do; they could never get me back again. For I was stiff and obstinate, and too foolish self-will'd; thinking that I should revenge my self in so doing; and so as I might spite him, I did not care how I sped my self. I brew'd ill and bak'd worse; I began in pride, and ended in folly. He looked still when I should return unto him, he tarried for me, a day, a week, a moneth, a year, nay many years; in all which time, he was not wanting to exercise his works of mercy towards me..

But

*Guzman  
hath new  
cloaths gi-  
ven him,  
and is tur-  
ned out of  
doores*

*Proud ig-  
norance,  
and self-  
will, much  
hurteth  
young men.*

But I for all this followed mine own humour, which was the rule by which I directed all my actions.

## CHAP. VII.

*Guzman being put out of the Cardinals house, he placed himself with the Embassadour of France, where he plaid some Knavish pranks. He relates a Story, which he heard from a Gentleman of Naples. And ending with that, he gives an end to the first part of his life.*

**B**Eing thus discarded, I wandred up and down at my own pleasure, (as my fancy did lead me) thorow the streets of Rome. And because in my prosperity I had purchased some friends of mine own profession, they seeing me unprovided for, and that I went up and down like a Masterlesse-hound, here one would invite me, and there another. I might very well have had meat of mine own to put in my mouth; for the Steward told me, that my Lord had given him order, that I should daily come and fetch it, or send for it, as I would my self. But I was so obstinate, that I would none of it. For I was so lewdly given, that I had rather endure hunger with ill company, than feed upon the best meat with honest and civill people. But they quickly paid me home, who first gave counsel to refuse my boord-wages, as I did, relying upon them and their advice; for they were soon weary of helping me. I have ever obseryed it as

a true rule amongst other the *Laws* of Hospitality, that a man may diet with his kinsman a *Saw, of*  
 seven-night, with his elder brother a moneth, *bisporality*  
 with his friend a year, and with a bad Father all  
 his life-time.

The Father only is not weary perhaps of entertaining his Son, but all the rest take dislike, if not a lothing of his company. If thou shalt stay with them beyond that time, they will pick one quarrel or other against thee; admit, that thou art invited by a married man, his Wife, Mother, or Sister, they will whine for anger to see thee there, look scurvily upon thee, grudge thee thy meat; chafe with her husband for bringing thee thither, curse both him and thee, and wish you both choak'd. Better is a hard crust in thine own house, than a cramm'd Capon in another mans. It is a miserable thing to set thy foot under another mans table.

My friends growing now weary of me, cast me off; I was now in extream want, that like the Prodigal Son, I would willingly have returned home, and been content with all my heart to be one of the meanest mercenary servants in my *Lords* house. But such was my misfortune, that he was now dead and gon.

I was now entred into the service of the *Guzman*  
 French Embassadour, with whom my Lord (who *sees the*  
 is now in glory) held strict amity; he us'd me *French*  
 well, but with a different end. For my Lord *Embassa-*  
 directed his actions to the profit and benefit of *dour.*  
 my person, but he only for his own private ends,  
 and the pleasure which he took in my jerkes of  
 wit, the merrytales that I would tell him, and  
 the pleasing passages that I should bring him  
 know

now and then, from those his *Ladies* and *Mistresses* to whom he made love. I was his servant at large; and he as largely paid me. For either he would give me my payment himself, or else I myself would take it in his presence with some pleasant jest or other; or to speak more plainly, I was his chief Minion and Favourite, though it pleased some to call me his Buffone and Jester.

When we had any guests (as we seldom or never wanted) we waited punctually upon them, but if they were either impudent, foolish, or troublesome guests, which came thither unbidden, upon such as these we would put a thousand jests. Some we would make to sit all dinner time without drink, that you would have thought, that they had been so many Melons sown in a dry ground; to others we would give very little, and that in pinching glasses; some had their wine over-watered, other some over-warm without any snow. When they were ready to eat their meat, we would take away their Plate from them, and set some salt meats before them, ill seasoned, with a little oyl that was none of the best. We would daily invent new devises, to abuse their palaces, that they might take dislike, and come there no more.

It hapned once upon a time, that an Englishman claiming kindred of the Embassadour, and it being a common custome with him to come daily to our house, my Master grew weary him; for (besides that he was not his kinsman) he was as neither Noble in his blood, nor indued with good, qualities, & above all, in his conversation full of impertinencies; he was a meer lump of lead

a man of no metall in the world, a dull and heavy piece of flesh, in a word, a meer block-head.

One night when they were set down to supper, he began to lay open his vanity, with telling a thousand lies one upon the neck of another, wherewith the Embassadour was much offended, and being not able to suffer such an one to go on in his fooleries, he spake to me in Spanish, (which the other understood not) and said unto me, Would I could be once rid of this fool; for I am as weary of him as ever I can be. He did not speak this to a Dolt, or an Ass: I had his meaning in the wind. Whereupon I took my friend to task: I followed him with salt meats, that were smart and sharp, and left behind them a kind of tartnesse or tang upon the tongue; wherewith being bitten, he call'd for his coolers, which he took almost faster than I could fill them.

The wine that he gulped down, was the gulf that swallowed him up. The glass: was great, his draught answerable, and those often, and this powder took so well, that at last he was powdered with a witnesse, and quite blown up.

When I saw he had yeilded himself prisoner to his pots, I took off one of my garters, and knit a sliding knot upon the instep of one of his feet, and fastned it unto the stool whereon he sate. And when the table was taken away, and that he offered to rise to take his leave, he was no sooner risen from his seat, but that he fell all along on the floor, his mouth, his teeth, and his nose being shredly hurt, the blood gushing out amaine. So that when he was come to himself  
the



*A tale of a  
Spaniard,  
who scorn-  
eth Guz-  
man, and  
shews him-  
self a craft-  
ier knave  
than he.*

the next day, and saw in what ill case he was, and how his face was battred with the fall, for very shame he would never more come near the house. This businesse was well carried, for it succeeded even as I would have it.

But there are some fishes that bite and carry away the bait with them, as it happened to me with a Spanish Souldier.

O the whorson traitour, how crafty and subtile a Rogue he was! How full of his cunning shifts!

This wily rascall came into the house about noon, when the Embassadour was ready to sit down to dinner, and coming unto him, he told his Lordship that he was a Souldier, and born in *Cordova*, and a principall Gentleman of that place, though now he were in want, and therefore besought him that he would favour him so far forth, as he might tast of his bounty. The Embassadour took a little purse, wherein were some crowns, and without offering to open it, he gave him both the purse and the gold that was within it, because he seemed to be the same he had exprest himself to be.

But not contenting himself with this, he continued still with him, recounting what he was, and the services wherein he had been. And so running on from one thing to another, the Ambassadour setting himself down to dinner, he makes me no more ado, but doth the like. And pulling a stool to him, sets himself cheek by jole with his Lordship.

*Count Jer-  
Falcons  
what they  
be.*

I was then gone to fetch in meat, when loe, by the way, I might perceive two other Jer-Falcons, like the former, which were newly entered

tered w  
stood.  
Lord,  
Souldi  
gyves u  
gets th  
by the  
WI  
again  
whet  
no? C  
hunt  
pull  
shop  
T  
Gen  
hun  
will  
ther  
and  
the  
and  
stan  
fear  
nes  
lou  
Fo  
fig  
m  
m  
m  
to

ted within the Court; and when they understood, that this other was at dinner with my Lord, the one said to the other; As I am true Souldier, either the Devil, or Sin hath clapt gyves upon our legs; for this cheating Rascal still gets the start of us, and wins all that he plaies for, by the elder hand.

When I heard them thus mutter and maunder against him, I came unto them, and asked them; whether they knew that Gentleman within, or no? One of them told me, I know that Tavern-hunter, whose Father hath many a time and oft pull'd on my Buskins in *Cordova*, where he keeps shop under the wall of the great Church.

This is our unhappiness, that if some twenty Gentlemen of us go for *Italy*, there return an hundred such infamous fellows as this is, that will equall themselves with the best, and boast themselves to be descended of the ancient *Goths*: and when they come where they are not known, they think that with the gumming of *Mouchatos*, and making them bear up as stiffe as if they were starcht, and with the wagging of three or four feathers in their Hat, they are grown into nobleness of blood, and purchased the name of Valour, being no better than notorious Cowards. For it is not Feathers, and starcht beards, that fight it out in the Field, but stout hearts, and men of stiffe courage. Come, let us go, I will make this effeminate Rascal, the next time I meet with him, leave off comming into our quarter, and file himself in some other rank.

With that they went their wayes, whil'st I went considering with my self what kind of cat-tell these three were, that thus sought to grace  
and

and set forth themselves.

But I was somewhat angry at those other two, taking them to be but *Braggadoccios*, and meer puffers, as well for the vaunt they made of themselves, as for the ill language they used, in defaming him, who sought to honour himself, without any cost or prejudice to others.

I was likewise not a little moved against this new-come guest, for his bold and insolent carriage, who might very well have contented himself with that which was given him, and so gone his wayes, without being so impudent to sit down at table in that swaggering and uncivil fashion; I had a moneths mind to be at him, I long'd to break one jest or other upon him, and to put it so home, that he should not be able to avoid it; but thinking to go forth to fetch wood, I was forced to come back with my fleece shorn, failing very much in this my intent and purpose. He entreated me to give him some drink. I made as if I did not understand him. He beckned unto me with his hand. I drew nearer unto him. He made me a third sign. I turn'd mine eyes another way, looking very demurely, and carrying with me a sober and composed countenance, (though I had much ado to forbear laughing.) He looking well upon me, and perceiving that I either plaid the fool, or the knave with him, he would not speak or beckon any more unto me, but turning himself towards the Ambassadour, he thus said unto him:

Sir, I beseech your Lordship, that you would not think it over-boldness, or too much presumption in me, that I have offered (though unbidden) to sit down at your Lordships Table, in regard

regard  
to you  
ded th  
ners)

First  
blence  
or ord

Sec  
worth  
I have  
profes

An  
fity I  
may b

An  
so fre  
such  
your  
Soule  
parts  
your

TI  
pleas  
me so  
they  
calles

M  
him  
but

W  
and  
ter v  
as d  
will

regard of those many excuses which I can render to your Lordship, which may (if I have offended therein, and broken the rule of good manners) plead somewhat in my favour.

First, the quality of my person; and the nobleness of my House, doth deserve any common or ordinary courtesie.

Secondly, my being a Souldier, makes me worthy of any Princes Table whatsoever; because I have purchased that honour by my Sword and profession.

And lastly, I may adde thereunto the necessity I now am in, which is common to all; and may befall any man, as well as my self.

And I presume, that your Lordship keeps this so free and honourable a Table for to relieve such as my self; and therefore conceive, that your Lordship holds it not necessary, that such Souldiers as my self, having any worth; or good parts in them, should expect to be invited to your board.

Therefore I shall desire your Lordship to be pleased to command one of your servants to give me some drink; for being a Spaniard, I perceive they do not understand me, though I have often called for it.

My Lord thereupon commanded us to give him drink, so that I could not otherwise choose but do as I was bid.

Well, I brought him drink, but in so poor and penurious a glasse, and mixed so much water with his Wine, that I left him in a manner as drie as he was before. But because a little will serve a Spaniards turn, and that they are

inured to suffer such hunger and thirst, with that little pittance, which was rather a drop than a draught, he passed therewith as well as he could till dinner was done.

We that were Pages, having conspired altogether, not to look him any more in the face while he was eating, lest he should speak again unto us by signes, to give him more drink; But he was an old beaten Souldier, and knew well how to use the weapon of his wit, and being too hard for us, did likewise beat us from this ward, which we thought had been too sure an one, to be put from. For when he had fill'd his belly, and well satisfied himself, and that the last course was served in, And your Lordship will give me leave (quoth he) I will now go drink. And so rising up from board, removing his stool from him, he went to the Court-Cupboard, and taking from thence the biggest Glasse that was there, he powr'd forth as much wine and water as himself thought fit, and having quenched his thirst, putting off his hat, and making a legge to his Lordship, got him out of the room, and so went his way, without speaking any one word or other. My Lord was ready to burst with laughing, to see how he had put me beside my trick; and after that he had wondred a while at the resolution and boldness of this fellow, he said unto me; *Guzmanillo*, this Souldier favours somewhat of thee, and thy Countrey, where all is carried away with *Bravado's*, and an impudent kind of behaviour.

Now whilst we were talking at Table  
of

# *The Life of Guzman*

99

of the liberty and free kind of carriage, which the Spaniards assume unto themselves, there was newly come into the house a Gentleman of *Naples*, who had no sooner saluted my Lord, but he told him, that he was purposely come unto his Lordship to acquaint him with one of the cruellest, and strangest accidents, that hath hapned in these our times, which now very lately fell out in *Rome*.

The Embassadours hour was come, that he must to the Palace, which made all break off for that present, and to take their leaves.

---

*FINIS.*

---

R

SE

Gu

P

THE  
ROGUE,  
OR THE  
SECOND PART  
OF THE  
L I F E  
OF  
GUZMAN de ALFARACHE.

---



---

LONDON,

Printed by *Henry Hills*, in the  
year MDCLV:





R

The  
G

What  
ed  
ky



and  
bou



I

# THE ROGUE:

OR,

The second part of the Life of  
GUZMAN de *Alfarache*.


---

*The first Book.*

---

CHAP. I.

*What befell Guzman from the time that he served his Master the Lord Embassadour, till he left Rome.*



T that time as I served my Lord Embassadour, I was his Favourite, and as it were the apple of his eye; I served him as a merry companion, and could make him laugh at my pleasant and witty conceits; and I can Assure thee, that any other corporal labour would have been of lesse trouble unto me:

A a a 2

for

for to utter pleasant conceits, witty jests, and to give a frump, or a flout with a grace, that it may take handsomely, there must be many things con-  
curre.

Hereunto will be required a particular gift of nature, which shall give credit and grace there-  
unto, with a joynt conjuncture in the carriage of the countenance, shape and motion of the body and eye, also a continual reading, to know how, and when, and from what he is to form his con-  
ceit. He hath likewise need of a strong memorie.

He must take a great deal of care in the en-  
quiry of those things that are most worthy the re-  
proving of other mens lives, and most of all, in those that are most Noble. For, neither making of faces, freeness of tongue, gestures of body, life and quickness of the eye, nor all the skill and wit in the world shall be available to move the mind, if they be not seasoned with pepper and salt.

*Tarts jests  
take best.*

That little touch of tartnesse, that corn of salt, those drops of Vinegar, are those which give a good relish, and a pleasant farewell to all the rest, be it never so simple, never so unfavoury. Those endowments which nature had denied me, I was forc'd to make good by tricks and devices, having ( God he knowes ) no learning at all.

In those my yonger dayes, and in that spring-  
time of my flourishing years, all went currently with me; all that I did became me well, and to all did I fit and apply my self.

*Guzman  
the onely  
man with  
his Master.*

For these, and other the like things annexed thereunto, I was alwayes well clad, much made of, I was the Favourite, the familiar Friend, the Master of my Master, as also of those that were inter-  
ested in his friendships

I was the principal door whereby they entred into his grace and favour, and only I the LORD of his will. I kept the golden key of his secrets.

Conceive not this opinion of me, that I go about to tax those Princes, that keep Fools and Jesters in their Palaces, for their entertainment, and pleasure.

A certain Noble-man, that was exceedingly given to lying, one day talking in conversation with divers other Gentleman of quality, told them, that he had kild a Stag, bearing so many branches or Antlers on his head, that it did plainly appear to be a lie, though he carried it very handsomely. They all admired it, they said; (but not gain-said it) that it was one of the strangest things that ever was seen, or heard of. Why (quoth an ancient Gentleman, a near kinsman of his, after a pretty kind of fashion bringing it forth;) doth your Lordship and these Gentlemen make such a wonder at this? This is nothing, my Lord; For, within these few daies I my selfe did kill one in the same Forest, that had two more than this that you talk of.

*A short  
Tale of a  
Nobleman  
that was  
much given  
to lying,*

When he heard him say so, the Noble-man blest himself, saying; It is not possible: and looking angerly upon him, said unto him; Sir, speak no more of this, tell it no further for it is such a thing as was never yet seen, nor will I for my part ever believe it.

The Gentleman with a stern countenance, and undaunted courage, boldly said, Zownds (my Lord) me thinks your Lordship should content your self, that you have sixty thousand Crownes a year coming in more than I, without seeking to out-strip me in lying, as you do in living, let me (I

pray) though I am a poor man) lie as I list: I beg nothing of you, nor any man else; nor do I rob any man, either of his wealth, or his honour.

My Master took pleasure in hearing me, and liked me for something else too besides my talk.

He was very discreet, of a settled and well-composed behaviour, vertuous, courteous, well-studied, and a great lover of those that had in them such commendable parts of learning as were worthy the recommendation. He was endued with all those good qualities, which were to be required in a person of his place and imployment; he was like a goodly room, furnished with all those rich ornaments which might set it forth, and make it appear fair and beautiful in the eyes of the beholders, but in the midst thereof, even in the very best part of all the room, there was a choak-pear sown and grown up, which did much blemish it. He was an *Enamorado*. one that was over head and ears in love. For there is no flesh so sound, that hath not some corruption; nor no body so free, that hath not some one infirmity or other. And his was, that he did but love too well; yea, even to excess. Many wise men have said, that a man cannot be absolutely perfect, unlesse he have once in his life-time been in love.

He had  
one ill quality,  
which  
did drown  
all the rest.

A Tale of  
a Crier.

And of this opinion it seemeth, was that pleasant-conceited Countrey fellow, that was the common Crier in his Parish, who having often cried an Ass that another Countrey fellow had lost, did earnestly intreat him, that he would do him the kindnesse to crie him once more upon the Sunday following, after high masse was ended; and if he should chance to hear any tidings of his Ass, he would for his labour give him a little

young

young fat Pig that he had at home.

The knave Crier greedy of the Pig, did as he had requested him, And all the people being met together in the market-place, he stood in the midst thereof, and cry'd out with a loud voice ; To all manner of people that are dwellers in this Town, or borderers thereabout, be it known, that if there be any man or woman, that hath never yet been in love, let them come in, and tell me their name, and they shall have a fine young Pig for their labour. And God save the King.

There was leaning against the wall of the Council house, a lubberly lad of some two and twenty years of age, with long shag hair, a russet Cassock one his back, welked with the same cloth, open about the shoulders, and close before ; Breeches of white cotton Bayes, gathered and plaited beneath at the knees, a Shirt with a band thereunto, so hard quilted throughout the stock, that a Turkish bow with a very sharp arrow was not able to pierce it ; a poor thread-bare Cloak ; a pair of high shooes of Neats-leather, knit together with two strings of twisted Hemp, and bare-legged, who coming in all haste to the Crier, in his clownish kinde of language said unto him ; Brother *Sanz*, give me the Pig : for by these ten bones I vow unto yon, that I was never yet in love, never had my head puzzled with it, nor ever paid any Tole to that Mill.

Then the Crier calling the owner of the beast in all haste, and pointing to this Chop-loch with his finger, said unto him, *Anton Berrocal*, give me my Pig, and take you here your Assc.

By this then we may see, how much it may import a man to love. Mistake me not, I

*Touching*

*Love.*

mean, when the ends are good, and honest.

But in my Master it was taken in the worse part; for his ends did exceed and passe their bounds; and the blame of all that ill was laid upon me; every man conceiving, that I was the cause thereof: Complaining, that since I came to serve him, I had opened his scull, and put into his head nothing but Hawks-bells and Rattles; all that he took delight in, were merry tales, idle jests, and the like vanities. But for to speak the truth (seeing the Parties are not here to be examined, and I am the man whom they thus accuse) I assure you, that others had the handling of him before, that wrought him this harm.

For when I entred into his service, and that he came to put his cure into my hands, the Physicians despaired of his recovery, and had given him quite over; I will not deny, but by reason I was in such favour with him, I had likewise the freedome to use many old fool sh jests.

*Guzmans  
course of  
life in  
Rome.*

I was familiarly acquainted with all Rome, I had as free access into every house, as into our own, excusing my pretensions, that I only repaired to such and such places, to give lessons to some to sing to the Git ern, and teach other some to dance.

I did entertain your young Wenches in good conversation with merry and pleasant jests; and your widowes, with whispering tales in their ears; and entering into a league of friendship with your married-men, I got likewise the good will of their wives, to whom they would bring me to laugh and make sport, wherewith they were well pleased, for the good contentment they took in my harmlesse mirth.

And all this I did, to the end, that from this  
good

good grow  
clare and  
relating  
abroad,  
with the  
his heart  
I do i  
ment of  
good ca  
what e  
Great r  
Ladies  
them t  
reason  
daugh  
with ha  
taile.

By  
have  
confi  
Wiv  
to ha  
tern

I  
Baw  
live  
and  
by  
to  
int  
tho  
up  
in  
W  
v

good ground, my master might take occasion to declare and open himself more freely to me. For I relating unto him, What, and how things passed abroad, it was an easie matter for me to kindle with the breath of my words, the fire that was in his heart.

I do ingenuously confesse, that I was an instrument of his excesses and flying out; what other good can be expected from your neat Pages? what do your Princes witty Jesters, and your Great mens Dwarves serve for, but to talk with Ladies and Gentlewoman, and to endear unto them their Masters love? And it stands to good reason, that a light mother should breed a loose daughter. And if she love to have her train plaid withal, that her daughter will prove a Wag-taile.

By this you may see, what obligations Parents have to look well unto their Children: let them consider, how much better it were, that their Wives, Sisters, and Daughters, should rather learn to handle their Needle, than to play on the Gittern; to govern well, rather then to dance well.

It was not good, I confesse, that I should be a Bawd to my Master: but every man would fain live. And this Office I performed by those tricks and devices I told you of before, taking occasion by my familiar and general acquaintance in *Rome*, to go as boldly into every mans house, as I would into mine own, excusing this liberty of mine, by those pretensions I made, of teaching some to play upon instruments, and some to dance; entertaining in the mean while Maidens with merriments; Widowes, with old wives tales and what was whispered abroad; and entering into amity  
with



with married men, good honest kind Cuckolds.

But I was in some sort to be excused, for that my wants and necessity drave me to do as I did, and what I did herein, was to wedge my Masters affection unto me, and to work my self into his favour, both which I came to be possesse of.

Women that entertain chat with your crack-rope Pages, with your giddy headed Poets, that never go without a Musk-Comfet in their mouth, or chewing the rinde of a Lemmon; with your flatter Capt Citizens, your Countrey Lads, and the like; some perhaps may hold them discreet; but I am sure they lose the name of chaste.

Now the profit that I made by this occupation, trading with this person, and with that, with t'other and t'other, this my conversation being so generall, it was the onely means, that kept me from being discovered to be a Bawd.

The greatest punishment that lighted then upon me was; that my hayrs began to sprout, and my Chin to put on a beard, the which the more I shav'd, because I would not have it perceiv'd, the thicker it came, and grew the faster. And for that it is a peculiar Office belonging to handsome and witty Pages, to be *Venus* and *Cupids* chiefest Ministers, the more diligence I used in tricking, adorning, trimming, and setting my self forth in lascivious manner, the more occasion I gave the world thereby to talk and judg of me accordingly. I studyed to be neat and handsome in my clothes, but took no heed how foul the fashion of my behaviour was; and therefore it was no marvell if they threw durt upon me with their tongues. In a word every one would bestow upon, and force me to wear his Livery, you know what

I mean; and though I told them they lyed like a company of Rogues and Villains as they were, they would laugh and hold their peace, giving by this their mystical kind of silence, a more open way unto the truth. Their taunts against me were true, and strook deep; whatsoever I reply'd upon them, they made but a jest of it; my words were but as the picking of straws, theirs as the peircing of Darts.

I was not able to stand against so many; I saw they had reason on their side, and therefore I was willing to be hush, and to pocket up these wrongs with patience;

And (making a vertue of necessity) I was forced to pass over all these bobs and jerks they had at me, sometimes with a smile, sometimes a jest, and sometimes with both.

In conclusion, I saw I could not well be worse thought of than I was already, and therefore casting aside all thought of amendment, I counted it a credit unto me, and took rather a pride in it than otherwise, and so making light of it, and jesting it out, I did set a good face on the matter.

So that by this they persecuted me the less, and I past the more quietly along by them. If I should have attempted any other way to pacifie them, I should never have been able to do it; and should thereby have but made the fire more to flame, by seeking to assuage it with Flax and Rozin.

Let him therefore, whosoever will take upon him to set open a shop to Vice, provide himself of a *Tortoyse* shell, arm his back with patience, and keep his ears, and his mouth shut. And let not any man flatter himself, that having foul conditions he shall get him a fair report.

My

*A Tale of  
two Gen-  
tlemen,  
that dined  
with the  
French  
Embassa-  
our.*

My Lord the Embassadour (as you have already heard) kept a free Table, was rich, and took great pleasure in keeping a good house; And because all guests do not alwayes give content, it one day happened, that he made a feast for the Spanish Embassadour, and amongst divers other Gentlemen, there came two to dinner unto him, that were principall persons, the one a Captain, the other, a Doctor of Law: but to his Lordship both troublesome and wearisome alike, for the great pleasure that they took to hear themselves talk. Of whose impertinences, and frivolous discourses, my Lord had in private some speech with me heretofore.

My Master would faine have rid his hands of them, and have shak'd them off but he could not; for that they met him in the street in his way homeward, and would needs wait on him to his house; as men that did much honour his Lordship, and did owe him a great deal more service, than this their willing attendance upon his person, whereunto they owed all respect. So that my Lord (being so noble a Gentleman as he was) was driven by force to invite them to stay dinner, who had, as it were, by force accompanied him to his house.

As soon as I saw my Lord enter within the gates, I perceived presently by his countenance, that something, whatever it were, did trouble him. I looked earnestly upon him, and he understood my meaning. He told me what it was, (speaking unto me with his eyes, by casting them upon those two Gentlemen) and I needed no farther instruction to direct me what I had to doe.

I beginning to cast about with my self, what  
course

course I were best to take, to make those men (who had so distasted my Master) a sport and laughing-stock to all the rest of the company, and so to make them pay dearly for their dinner.

Nor did I take much pains in the finding of it out; Only I expected a fit occasion, to set it before them which was now near at hand. But I did deferre it, till the last course should be served in, and almost ended, that it might take the better. The Cloth was laid, meat on the boord, the Guests were merry, healths went round, and when I saw their blouds grew warm, and that they were set upon the merry pin, talking and laughing on all hands, some of one thing, some of another, a litle before they were to wash, the Towell being not yet thrown on the boord, nor the Basen and Ewer set down, I came close to the Captains side, and rounding him in the eare, told him a notable *non sequitur*; He laught heartily at it; and being bound to require me with another, made me bend down my head towards his bosome, that he might the better tell it me in mine eare; and so in secret, we made two or three passages one upon another; and when I saw my time, and that it served fit for my purpose, I began to raise my voyce a note higher, and with a cheerefull look, smiling merrily upon him, (as if we had talked all this while of that which I shall now tell you, when (God he knowes) we had never a word of any such matter) I told him, No, my *Senior Capitain*, no, you shall pardon me, I will not; if your Worship will vent it your self, you may better do it than I, for you have a good tongue to put it home, and a better arme to maintain it. I will hatch none of your eggs (good Captain) forth with them

them your self. For these are no fit and savory Jobs, for such a poor Youth as I am, and being so great a servant of Master Doctors, as no man in the world can be more.

With that, my Master, and all the rest of the Guests besides, began to cry out unto me at once, How now *Guzmanillo*, whats the matter? I know not Sir, unless my noble Captain here long to see my Crown shaven, and to have me to take my Degrees, which it seems, he would fain have me to do, seeking to set the Doctor and me together by the ears, and put us to the paring of each others nayles, till we be both toucht to the quick.

The Captain, when he heard me say so, was frost-bitten, and marvelling what the mystery of this roguerie should be, suspected there was some knavery in it, though he knew not what. And not knowing what to do, fell a laughing, without speaking any one word at all.

But the Spanish Embassadour call'd unto me, and said, Friend *Guzman*, now by my life, you shall not smother it; what's the matter I prethee? Let us know of thee, why at one and the self same time, thou laughest, and yet seemest angry? it must needs be some good conceit or other and therefore out with it.

Seeing your Lordship hath laid down so great a pawn as your life, I shall (though loth, and much against my will) tell you what it is; and I protest unto your Lordship, that I had rather have held my peace, and had you not sworn by your life, I would sooner have had my tongue drawn backwards out of the nape of my neck, than to utter the least syllable of that which I shall fully deliver unto you. Your Lordship shall therefore under-

stand, that my Captain here laid his Command  
 upon me, that I would break a jest upon this Doct-  
 or, my worthy and noble friend; girding at the cut  
 of his beard; for he saith that the fashion of his  
 beard is just for all the world like one of those  
 upon your Flemmish Iugges, and that a nights he  
 puts it in a Press, made of two thinne Trenchers  
 stru'd wonderful close, that no Gittern can be  
 closer shut up in it's Case, that it may come forth  
 the next morning with even corners, bearing in  
 gross the form of a Broom, narrow above, and  
 broad beneath, his Muchatoes Ruler wise, strait  
 and level as a line; and all the other hairs, as just &  
 as even as a Privet hedg, newly cut; answering each  
 other in an uniform manner, having the point  
 thereof in form of a Quadrant, drawn neatly out,  
 that it might make the fairer and larger shew. For  
 such a goodly Beard, accompanied with a Roman  
 Bonnet, (like your Briefs and your Largs in a Sing-  
 ing mans Book,) doth grace his lesser and grosser  
 notes. As if this were sufficient to make him be  
 held a great Scholar; as if this fair out-side  
 were a qualification for him; as if men had not  
 seen your *Cavallos Argeles*, some horses with one  
 onely white foot on the farr side behind, having  
 all the other parts of their body of another colour,  
 and yet came of a very good race. And some great  
 Block-heads, (though bred up in Vniversities,)  
 whose ignorance is a great deal larger than their  
 Gowns; being like herein unto some kind of Me-  
 lons, which cozen us with the gloriousness of their  
 colour, seeming to be good Melons to the show,  
 but indeed are worse than Pompions; no stuff,  
 no goodness in them. And this was it which my  
 Captain would have had me said, as from my self.  
 And

And this was it which made me cry, No no; and that he should tell it himself, and he would, for I would none of it. This is all, my Lord: if there be more behind, your Lordship may be pleased to lay your Comand on the Captain, who (I know) will be ready in this, or any thing else, to do your Worship service.

The Captain blest himself, when he saw whether I had driven the nayl, wondring at this my subtilness of wit, and cunning conveyance, himself and all the rest of the company laughing at it.

But my Doctor, having his head well warmed with Wine, knew not whether he were best to be angry, or to turn it to a jest: But all eyes being fixed on him, he pawsed a while and carrying a countenance betwixt anger and shame, at last he vented himself, and spake thus unto them.

My Lord, if my profession would permit it, that I should give my self that satisfaction, which such an impudencie as this deserveth, your Lordship might easily believe, that I would comply with that obligation, wherein I stand bound to my progenitours, and the honour of my House.

But being that your Lordships presence doth priviledge this insolent boldness, and that this place will afford me no other weapons than my tongue, your Lordship may be pleased to give me leave to demand of this Captain, How old he is? For if that be true which he sayes, that he served the Emperour, *Charles* the first, in his Warres, being with him at the battell of *Tunez*, how comes it to pass that he hath never a white haire in all his beard, nor black one in his head? And if he be so young, as he would seem to be, why doth he say, that he was present with him, at such  
and

in an ancient piece of service, and so long age as  
 as that was? Let him tell us, I pray, in what *Jor-*  
*dan* he hath washed, or to what Saint recommend-  
 ed himself: to the end that we may all offer up  
 Tapers to his shrine, and have recourse unto him  
 for help, when we shall have the like need. Let  
 him first declare this, and then let him goe on with  
 his game, and I will play mine as well as I can.  
 And since he hath first trumped about, let us try,  
 who can soonest beat out one another, and winne  
 more Tricks: For there is no reason he should so  
 carry it away, nor shall he get any thing by his  
 crossing of me, while I have a trump in mine  
 hand.

All the whole boord fell a laughing a fresh, but  
 especially my Master, for that two things were  
 then treated, which of all other he did hate and  
 detest, and desired the reformation of them, as no  
 man more.

And having will observed all that had passed  
 herein, he said unto me; Now tell me *Guzman-*  
*illo*, what thou doest think of this? Since thou  
 hast proposed the Argument, I will have thee to  
 resolve the Question. I then told him, All the  
 answer that I can make your Lordship, is onely  
 this: That they have both said Truth, and yet  
 both of them Lye in their beards.

*The con-  
 ceit consists  
 in the word  
 Ly; for  
 that they  
 did colour  
 the hairs  
 of their  
 Beards  
 with Lees  
 made of  
 purpose for  
 that use.*

B b b

Chap.



## CHAP. II.

*The Doctor would be revenged of Guzman. The Spanish Embassadour takes up the quarrell.*

They did all highly commend the jest, and some did indear it to farre, that the Doctor thereby was the more enraged, insomuch that they were sorry they had prest it so farr, and given it so great an applause.

But the Embassadour of Spain, through his great wildome, threw in his *Warder*, and took up the quarrell, making it (by his discreet handling of the matter) a merry meeting onely of friends, where no exception was to be taken at any thing that should merrily pass amongst them.

The Captain was a good-natur'd man, well behav'd, an old beaten Souldier, and a good fellow, who laugh'd heartily at it, let it pass as a jest, and blessed himself, vowing and protesting that he never spake any one such word unto me, nor was it ever in his thought to touch upon any such point. And though he were nipt, yet because he was a discreet Gentleman and a Souldier, (amongst whom now and then jests are broken, as well as Lances) he set light by it.

But when the Doctor certainly knew, that I had been the onely Author of all this mischief, he did set upon me in that fierce and terrible manner, that he did cut his words with his teeth, not being able to pronounce them plain, through his eagerness, and heat of choler. And he would faine  
hav:

have risen from the table to have had me by the ears, but they would not suffer him so to do.

And seeing he could not be revenged on me as he would; and having no other weapon to beat me withal but his tongue, he roundly laid about him, and letting the reigns loose to his rage, he bestowed his livery upon me, calling me by all the vile names that he was able to reckon up; whereof I made little reckoning, but did rather help him on, by teaching him what he should say.

This maddened him more than all the rest, to see me thus mock and scoff at all that he said, which made him break out worse than before, and to grow far more violent and outrageous with me. For, as if this bitter jest had been some Excommunication, that by a joint consent, and general Council as it were, had gone out against him, and that every one of us had a finger therein, he cared not whom he paid; and almost, nay, more than almost (if my Matter had not stopt him in this furious course) this business had grown exceeding foul.

He sought to pacifie him with the best reasons he could then use unto him, as one that would fain turn the Water another way, and divert these his evil intentions towards me; which that he might the better do, he began to shuffle the Cards anew; and to cut off all that former offensive conversation, he began a story, and said,

The Constable of Castile, *Don Alvaro de Luna*, in the time of his greatest greatness, residing in *Valladolid*, having one day entertained himself in a pleasant Garden, neer to the River *Pisuerga*, recreating himself in beholding the variety of Walks, the beautiful Flowers, the delicate Ar-

*The French Ambassador seeks to pacifie the Doctor.*

*A Tale of divers and sundry accidents of Love.*

bours, the shady Trees, and savourie Fruits, was resolved to remain there, and to take his full pleasure of that place untill the heat should be overpast.

And that he might the better in the mean while pass away the time, he intreated two Gentlemen that accompanied him thither, the one *Don Luy de Castro*, and the other, *Don Rodrigo de Monalve*, that each of them would tell him som Love-story. He very well knew, that these two Gentlemen were the onely Gallants then in Court, and great Lovers of Ladies, being both of them, besides Noble in their Name and Blood, discreet, valiant, active in their persons, of fair both feature and behaviour, curious in their cloaths, witty in their jests, un-offensively pleasant, in a word, so generally well-qualified, and so adorned with all those ornaments that might grace either their speech or their actions, that they were very well able to give him that satisfaction upon this subject, as more could not be desired. And the better to animate them on, he promised, in reward, a rich Diamond Ring, to him, whose tale, for the strangeness of the success, should best deserve it. *Don Luy de Castro* was first to begin, and thus he proceeded.

Don Luy de Castro  
his Love-story.

I loved a certain Lady of this Kingdom, a Virgin, as fair and beautiful, as she was discreet and honest; I served her many years: I ran at the Ring, maintained Turneys, and Tiltings, ordained Royal Feasts, and Maskes, and what not for her sake? the eys of my soul were never off her, but still waited upon her: she was the sole Mistress of my heart, for her sake onely I invented all these honorable pleasures, and delightful entertainments.

Upon these kinds of Feasts and sports, I spent so much, selling away my possessions, that I might compass the possession of her. My

My Father (it is well known) left me wonderful rich, both in goods and lands, but in short, I sent it packing. In the end, I became so poor, that your Lordships favour is the only prop that doth uphold me, and though this be none of the least griefs, to see a Gentleman to become poor and needy, that necessity must ty him to serve, who was wont heretofore to be served (yet I acknowledge it a happiness unto me, that I am your Lordships servant.)

My Mistress, in recompence of my constant love, plighted me her faith and troth. But whether these were the words of a woman, or the words of my short fortunes; un-mindeful of all those vows and protestations that had past between us, she scorning my poor condition married another.

I do not think that either *Don Rodrigo*, or any other Gentleman whatsoever, can instance a more misfortune than this of mine: for that loving her with that firmness and constancy (as I did) and serving her with that love and faithfulness (as none possibly could be more;) I lost my time, I lost my means, & at last I lost my Mistress. Only there is left this Ring, by way of reward.

*Don Rodrigo de Montalvo* said,

The Ring (*Don Lays*) is none of yours, I ought of right to have it. And turning himself towards the Constable, said,

Most Noble Sir, Though I confess that to be true which *Don Lays* hath delivered unto your Lordship, for that I was an eye-witness of all this business, he hath no reason to pretend the Diamond; for if he would but free himself of passion; he would judge this cause in my favour, for thus (may it please you to give me the hearing) did things pass,

# The Life of Guzman

Not long ago, there came to *Don Luys* an ancient Servant belonging to this Gentlewoman his Mistress, from whom he secretly delivered him a Letter. He opened, read it, and gave it me, that I likewise might peruse it; the sum whereof is.

**D**EAR Sir, you have little reason to accuse me of ingratitude, though my actions did not correspond with your deserts, the reason was, because they could not stand with that Decorum, which was due to my Maiden-State, and the danger that might ensue thereupon. My Marriage with you (which I desired more than I did mine own life) the obedience of a Daughter did disturb, and the Commands and earnest importunities of my Parents, moved thereunto by vain interest, and the Title of a Countess, forced me to yield my body unto him, to whom I could never surrender my soul. I have been yours, I am yours, and shall be yours all the daies of my life. I give you to understand, that the Count my Husband is to undertake a long journey; hasten hither unto me as soon as you can, and bring no other person along with you, save your Friend *Don Rodrigo*; And when you shall come to this Town, you shall find in a Hermitage adjoining thereunto, order given you for that which you are to do. Love me with all your heart (as you were wont) and as I do you, and live you as happily, as I wish you; concluding my Letter with dear embracements, which attend your coming.

*Don Luys* read it over and over; He looked upon every line, weighed them as a man would weigh Gold; he kist them a thousand and a thousand times

times over. I heartned him on, that he should hasten his departure with all possible speed, that he might comply with that, which his Mistress had given him in a Charge. This was presently put in execution; when we came to the Hermitage, we found there, a very grave and reverend Dame, who staid there, expecting our coming.

She delivered us a Message, the effect whereof was this: That her Lord, the *Conde*, was gone forth upon his journey, but was now newly returned, by reason of a certain indisposition of body that seized on him upon the way: But intreated us, to stay there, till she went to acquaint her Lady the Countess of our coming. She went; we staid; about eleven a clock at night she came back again unto us, and told us, we must follow her. We did so; till she brought us with much Secrecy into a lodging in the Palace, where we no sooner were, but the Countess comes forth, and receives us with extraordinary tokens of joy and gladness. And after that some few ceremonies were ended, the Countess said unto me, *Don Rodrigo*, the time that is now offered unto us, to enjoy this fair occasion, you, in your own discretion may judge, how soon it will be gone. You know the obligation of true Friendship, and the firm affection which you have alwaies made shew to bear unto *Don Luys*; but say, this should fail (which I no way misdoubt) yet for my sake, you are bound in courtesy to grant me my request. You have already understood, how the Count my Husband returned back from his journey, so weary, that he presently got him to bed, where I have left him fast asleep. But because it may so fall out, that in turning or waking, he should stretch out a leg or an arm, towards

wards that side of the bed, where I ly, and should find my place empty, and no body there, it must be a great deal of danger that I must run, besides the scandal, therefore whilst your friend *Don Luys* and my self shall entertain the time in talk, you would be pleased to go ly down in my place, that I may abide the safer here. And I will assure you on my honest word, that you shall not thereby incur any danger. For besides that the Count is old, He is so tyred with his journey, and of that indisposition of body at this present, that there is no fear that he will so much as but offer to stir, or move himself at all. But say he should, and that he should turn and touch you, he will not dream of any bodies being there but my self.

Your Excellency may conceive how much it troubled me, that the Countess should put me upon such a perillous piece of service.

I told her I would willingly do her this Service: they promised, nay swore unto me, that at the most she should not tarry away above half an hour.

The Countess put me into a night dressing and a Smock, led me along to her Chamber, and made me to ly down in her Bed. I softly laid my self down upon the very edge and brim, as it were, of the bed, as far from the Count, as I possibly could devise, and in that manner I remained there five good long houres and more, till it was break of day.

Now let every man consider in what a poor case I was, in such a place as this, and at such a time: I expected no less than death, if the Count should chance to awake. For in regard that I went in either naked, and unarmed, I must fight it out with my fists only; and admit I should have struggled with the

ould  
must  
fides  
Ln.  
you  
that  
you  
in-  
old,  
dis-  
ear  
ove  
he  
of  
it  
a  
:  
ft  
e  
F

the Count, and had the Fortune to escape his hands, yet could I not those of the Servants of his House, because I knew not how, nor which way to order my flight.

But *Don Lays* and the Countess, did laugh and talk so loud, that I might hear every Word almost that they had said, as I lay in the bed, wherewith my fear was much increased, lest happily their discomposed carriage might chance to awaken the Count; and it did mightily vex me, and almost mad me.

When they saw that day was now so nigh, they came both of them laughing hand in hand to the beds side, with a light in their hand (I being frighted almost out of my little wits) where they sportingly frisked and skipped about me, making a great noise as well with their tongues as their feet.

Then I began to imagine with my self, that through too much content, they had both run mad: they drew neerer to the bed it self; and the Countess drawing the Curtaine, that we might now plainly see one another, then was I quite out of my senses. For I, who had hitherto thought that I had the Count lying by me; the Countess lifting up the cloaths of the bed, cleared that error, and gave me to understand, that it was not he, but the Countesses Sister, a pure Virgin, yet as fair as *Venus*. Whereat, as likewise the j-st, I was so ashamed and daunted out of countenance, that for my life I could not speak a word, nor knew not what in the World to do, but to rise up in my Smock, and to get me over to look my clothes. Let your Excellencie therefore be pleased to consider in what danger I did put my self, and then to give your judgment which of us two doth best deserve the Ring.

The



The Constable, laughing heartily hereat, said, *Don Luys* had no reason to complain, seeing, though late, yet at length he had obtained his desire; so that he could not deserve the promised reward. And *Don Rodrigo* as little, for that he was not in any danger by sleeping with the Count; And therefore his Sentence was this, that neither of them deserved the Diamond; yet taking it off from his finger, he consigned it to *Don Rodrigo*, with condition that he should send it as a Token to this Gentlewoman, by whose side he lay; for that she only had incurred the danger, and had also run the hazard of her honor, if she had been known what she was.

The Courtiers highly commended the Constables Sentence, and all taking their leave of my Lord Embassador, they went whither their occasions called them.

---

### CHAP. III.

*How a Roman Matron being solicited by Guzman in his Lords behalf, the French Embassador, put a jest upon him:*

*A story of  
the French  
Embassad-  
ors Love.*

*The great-  
est enemies  
that a fair  
woman  
has.*

**M**Y Lord Embassadour fell in love with a Principal Gentlewoman, nobly descended, whose name was *Fabia*; her husband a Gentleman of *Rome*, old, poor, and ill accoutred, three strong and powerful enemies against a woman that was young, fair, and well brought up. For these reasons, and by the help of a Maid of hers (which had been a Virgin) but was now my Sweet-heart, and

and mine own dear Love, I was verily perswaded  
 I should easily get the game. Who could have lost  
 a fair a Set, having such store of sound Trumps,  
 and other good Cards in my hand? But I had  
 a wonderful cross Carding, and every trick that I  
 laid, fell out to the worst.

When this Gentlewoman understood, what  
 passed betwixt my self and her servant, she began  
 to devise with her self, how she might be revenged  
 on us both, and the plot that was laid between  
 us, for the effecting of my Lords desires. And this  
 she did the rather, for that she saw, that her wait-  
 ing Gentlewoman, for my sake, did so earnestly  
 sollicite this cause, and that for my interest, and  
 to do me a pleasure, she did follow this business  
 with all care and diligence, taking her fit times to  
 put her often in mind thereof, not suffering a  
 Card to pass without a Vie, and knew handsomely  
 how to put them home: insomuch, that when  
 this honourable Matron saw, she could not be in  
 quiet for her, but was thus hardly set upon in her  
 own house, she made no outcries, no squeamish  
 replies, no cunning impostures, but as Roman,  
 so did she perform a Roman Act, feigned her self  
 to be somewhat touched with Loves passion, and  
 that she was now upon the point of yielding, if  
 not wholly overcome.

*The wickedness of  
 some Ser-  
 vants.*

One day, when as her Maid was making of her  
 ready, and was instant with her in this business,  
 looking upon her with a smiling and chearful  
 countenance, she said unto her, *Nicoleta*, I assure  
 thee, that if thou hadst not wrought upon me, using  
 so many strange inventions, and hadst not spent so  
 many elaborate and well-studied words in this sure  
 of thine, thou hadst ere this made that will of  
 mine

*The discreet  
 carriage of  
 a woman  
 tempted to  
 lewdness.*

mine to yeeld, which hath hitherto stood our long. For I wish well unto *Guzman*, and approve his discreet proceeding in this business. Besides, his Master is of that merit, that any woman whatsoever, be she of never so honourable quality, without being so much sollicitated, as I have been, ought to embrace his love and friendship, and offer her service unto him. But as thou thy self both knowest, and seest, I do not know how it will be possible, that this our Treaty shall be secure from scandalous tongues, being that now upon no just cause given, and I for my part having as yet yeelded no consent unto that, which perhaps I so much desire, that is whispered already in every corner, nay thorow all *Rome*, which neither in mine own house, nor with thee, (which canst onely be the instrument of our pleasure) did I ever yet communicate. And since it is now come to this pass, that the popular voice runs on with great liberty, & I not able to deny the love of this noble Gentleman, all that I would intreat at thy hands, is, that thou wilt dispose and order it, with the greatestt secrecie that may be. Speak therefore to *Guzman*, that he wait and attend hereabouts for some few nights, for I will find opportunity some one night or other, to give him entrance, that I may see him, and talk with him concerning the carriage of our loves.

*Nicoleta* fell down upon her knees to the ground, not knowing which she should kisse first, her feet or her hands, with a face set all on fire with too much joy: disgracefully laying open the faults of her old Master. Then did she reduce unto her remembrance those former distastes which she had received from him; in what wretched estate, through

ough his misery, she lived in; his base kind  
d our for carriage, and what drie fodderings he did give  
and ap; all to encourage her the more to go bravely  
els. Be in this her resolution:

ny wo. Hereupon she came forthwith flying unto me, \**A reward*  
ountable ing her armes abroad, and strongly twining *for good*  
d, as I am about my neck, she claspt me as hard as she *news.*  
friend.uld for her life, demanding \**Albricias* at my  
as thou ands, which when she had received, she would  
know late unto me what had past between her and her  
Treaty Mistressse. I took her by the hand, leading her a-  
being ing with me, into my Masters withdrawing  
or my Chamber, where, with a great deal of joy we ce-  
that, brate this gladfom news; plotting and contriving  
ered with our selves touching the hour, how and where  
ome, might find entrance to speak with *Fabia*. And  
thee, my Master giving to *Nicoleta* a little purse which  
dear he had in his pocket, cramm'd with Spanish pisto-  
it is lers, she made as if she were unwilling to take  
purs them of him, but did not all this while close her  
love fist, nor pull back her hand, but out of modesty  
reat held it between forward and backward, like a phy-  
der scian, when he is offered more than his fees, and  
tak with a jocund smile, gave him thanks for this his  
re- courteous liberality; and with this she took her  
or- leave both of him and me. And when it was night,  
ce, at the appointed hour, I took up my standing,  
n- gave the watch-word, and made such signes as  
he were ordered between us, but neither that night,  
t, nor some three or four more following, could this  
h agreement made between us, take effect.

One day amongst the rest there happened to fall  
a small, but withall a shrewd rain, wherein at  
my wonted hour I was to make my accustomed  
walk, being dabbled to the girdle, I came thither  
reasonable

reasonable well wet. It was my hap to have the end of my desires. As soon as I had given the signe it was known who was there, yet notwithstanding they made me to wait in the rain, till I was so thorow wet, that the water that came in at my poll, dropt out at my knees, and went guttering down into my shooes, and then at last, after I had been a long time in this cold bath, they called unto me, and willed me to have the patience to stay yet a little longer.

In the end, when all my cloths and my self were dung wet, and that I had not a dry thred about me, I might perceive the door to open very softly, and *Nicoleta* to call upon me. And then (me thought) that very breath which came from that voyce, brought that comfortable heat with it, that I was thorow dry all over on the sudden. *Nicoleta* and I exchanged but a few words; for she had scarce bid me welcome, when lo, her Mistris came down, and calling to her servant, said; Doe you hear (*Nicoleta*?) Get you up, & see what your Master is a doing, and if he chance to ask for me, come and call me, whilst I in the mean while stay talking here with *Sennor Guzman*.

Now, all this *interim* we were in the dark, so that we could scarce discern one another. Then did she begin to question me concerning my health, and how it was with me. That complement performed, I delivered her a large message from my master, and how great a servant he was of hers, inlarging this Theme with an elegant Oration, which I had studied of purpose onely to this end. But when I was in the greatest force of this Argument, she seeming to be amazed, and

starded

startled with some sudden perturbation, abruptly  
said unto me,

*SENIOR GUZMAN*, as you love my life, let me  
intreat you to hold me excused; for with a conceiv-  
ed fear, that at this very instant hath seized  
upon me, me thinks, every bodies eye is upon me,  
all in the house watch & observe me. And therefore  
for Gods sake, let me intreat you to enter in here  
this way, and there right over against you, you  
shall find a lodging Chamber, get you quickly in-  
to that, and carry there till I have given a turn or  
two about the house, to see if the coast be clear,  
and all my people safe, and I shall presently return,  
again unto you; but I pray have an especiall care  
the mean while, that you stand still, and make not  
any the least noyse in the world. I gave credit un-  
to her, and went straight on as she had directed  
me, and thinking that I had gone athwart a little  
open entry, making more hast than good speed, I  
lighted ere I was aware into a huge beastly Hog-fly,  
that stood in a filthy durty Court, where I had no  
sooner gone some two or three steps, but I stumbled  
(through too much hast) upon a great dung mixen,  
and fell with my head just against the wall, giving  
my self such a sound knock, that I lay there for  
a while senselesse: But with that little life that was  
left me, by little and little I came to my self again,  
and scrambling up again as well as I could, I went  
groaping along the walls with my hands (as chil-  
dren do when they play at blind-man-buff) to see  
if I could find out this appointed Chamber; but  
I could find no other out-let, save that whereby  
I had made my entrance. I rounded it once a-  
gaine.

*Guzman*  
notably  
mocked by  
Fabia, and  
in what  
manner.

And wandring thus up and down this Maze,  
it

it was my hap to light upon a little narrow lane, as it were, whereat there was no going forth, having a house of Office at the end of it, ill covered, and that not wholly neither over-head, where was onely the one half of an old broken great pitcher, which was full of Ordure, being fixed fast to the ground and beastly berayd round about, yeelding no very sweet sent, whereby *I* began to conjecture the danger *I* was in, and to consider with my self the many mis-fortunes that had befall me.

Well, when *I* saw how the world went, *I* sought to get out where *I* came in: but *I* found the door was fast shut upon me, and that there was no hope of getting forth. It rained extremely, and showed down so fast upon me, that *I* was forced to shelter my self under that poor miserable old ruinous open. *I* cannot tell whether *I* should teame it rather Hovell, than Houle, standing up to the knees in durt, whose perfume was none of the pleasantest.

There *I* did pass over the remainder of that night. Nor was it onely the falling of the raine, that did novv afflict me, vvhich came not drizzling or mizling down upon me, but vvith a full and open gutter, and, at last vvith drops as bigge as Pease: But *I* began to think vvith my self vvhat should become of me; for *I* could not but imagine, that she that had made that Mouse-trap for me over-night, vvould the next morning deliver me over to the Cat.

After this conceit had run a while in my head, *I* entred into the other discourses, wherewith *I* might comfort my self, resolving when the Master of the house shall find me here, all that *I* will say unto him, shall be, that his Maid brought me hither,  
and

and that I am her Husband. For it would be the lesser harm unto me to be married unto her, than to see my Bones marred with torment, to make me to confess what I made there : and I would rather seek to content them with this answer, than they should kill me.

Thus I went, beating my brains about, discussing to and fro, what would be the issue of this business; when lo, anon after two of the clock in the morning, I perceived that the door was opened, thinking that *Fabia* was now returned; But when I came to the door, and found it unlockt, and no body living thereabouts, I began to be more afraid than I was before; I unsheathed my Sword, and taking that in one hand, and my dagger in the other, by little and little, I got at last to the street door, which I likewise found was open.

Then I plainly perceived, that what had already past, was in punishment of my over-boldness. I comforted my self as well as I could; I came at last to our own House, and opening my Chamber door, I put off my cloaths, and got me in between the blankers to recover some heat, which through the waters and the winds I had lost.

In this manner did I ly, till it was about ten a clock in the morning, thinking and devising with my self, what answer I should make unto my Master; if I should deal plainly and truly with him, and acquaint him with the whole passages of this business, it would be a great affront unto me, and that I should be plaid upon every moment with whole Volleys of jests, and move even the very children in the street to scoff and laugh at me. And to deny it, and entertain his Lordship with vain and idle hopes, me thought that likewise was not fitting



ting. For *Nicoleta* had already recovered her *Albricias*, and was well rewarded for her good news; and therefore this might seem unto him to be a meet invention to defeat him of his money.

Whilst I was thus musing with my self, how I might invent some means to set all right, one of the Servants of the house came knocking at my door, and told me, that my Lord would have me come to him.

Well, I got me up, shifted my cloths, and put on a fresh sute, the best hat I had; and being then as fine and as gallant, as if no such disaster had happened unto me, I hyed me up unto my Lord, who expected my comming, and had no sooner seen me, but presently askt me how the world went, and how chanced it, that I had no sooner come to give an account of what had past betwixt *Fabia* and my self? I told him, That they made me stay waiting in the street until it was midnight, expecting a fair birth of this business, but it proved in the end that I was dismiss with a *Non licet*, telling me, that she could not possibly either speak with me or open the door.

I also then signified unto him, that I would go and ly down a while upon my bed, to see if I could take some rest, for I did not find my self half well. He gave me leave so to do. Whereupon I went to my chamber, put off my cloths, got me to bed, where I remained till it was almost night, hatching a thousand conceits in my head, wasting my wits, and limbecking my brains, without drawing any juice or substance thence at all. And because what in regard of my rage and anger, as also the sundry thoughts and imaginations that troubled my mind, I was not able to take any rest on either

side,

side, but lay tumbling from t'one to t'other; if I lay on my back, I ttraight vway vvaxed vveary; if I late up in my bed, my Hips vv ere too feeble to beare up my body. Whereupon I resolved vvith my self to rife. And I had no sooner taken my cloathes into my hands, and put my feet out of my bed, but one of the Groomes of the Stable came into my Chamber, and told me, *Scnnor Iuzman*, There are some pretty Wench es beneath at the staires foot vvich inquire for you, and stay vvaiting for your comming in the Portall vvithin the gate. A pockes upon them. quoth I, vvhat have I to do vvith them? The Devill take them for me. Goe down, and either bid them goe to the Stevvs, or else tell them, that I am not vvithin. For I imagined vvith my self, that all *Rome* by this time had rung of my disgrace, and that these vv ere some Roguish harlottries, that came to laugh and scoff at me, and to make themselves merry vvith my mis-fortunes. I vv as very jealous that they came of purpose to play the Wagges vvith me, and therefore vvilled him to dismisse them: and so they vv ent their vvayes.

The next morning I vv as no sooner up, but I received a Letter from my *Nicoletta*, complaining of me, that having come to vv isit me the day before, I vvould not be spoken vvithall, nor give her notice of that vvich had past the other night betvvixt my self and her Mistris, and vvhat great businesse I had, that I did not round that street the next night followving, telling me, that she had vvaited there for my comming, till it vv as after midnight.

I vvrote her an answer, telling her, that I vvould not fail sometimes that evening to come

and visit her in the back Lane, that was behind the House.

*The Incon-*  
*stancy of*  
*idle young*  
*men.*

When I was come thither, and she ready to receive me, she began to ask me what was become of me? what great occasions did hinder me that I had not come and seen her the night before? And if not for her, yet for her Mistresses sake, I might have taken that pains. She formed many complaints against me, accusing the inconstancy of men, who made love unto Women, not so much for any good affect on that they bore them, as to get the conquest and Mastery of them; and when they had gotten what they desired, and received some Pledge from them, they did quickly slight them, if not wholly forget them.

By this, as likewise by that profession which she made of her love to me, I knew her innocency, and Fabia's subtilty, who went about to deceive us both. Thereupon I told her, My Nicoleta, thou art quite out of the way, and so mightily deceived, as no one can be more. For I would have thee to know, that thy Mistress hath played the Jack with us both. Then I up and told her all that had befallen me, and how vilely she had used me. She blest her self, crossing and recrossing her self over and over, thinking it to be a thing impossible. As I stood thus talking with her in my best bravery, it happened that one of the Grooks found nuzzling in the Litter which he had made ready for his Hories, a huge big Bore. He being much moved thereat, took up a great Bar in his hand, and belaboured his back and sides; it was a fat Rogue and a great; and like a Bull that is baited, came running forth, as hard as he could drive, he came directly upon me, and took me so on the sudden that I could

by

by no means avoid him, and perforce made his way just between my legs; so that I rode as it were astride on Horse-back, but the clean contrary way, and to keep my self from falling, I took hold of his Tayl with both my hands, using that instead of a Bridle, I was not able all this while to recover my self, and had my life lain upon it, I knew not for the present how to quit my self, handsomely from his Back; and whilest I was devising with my self how I might come fairly off, he ran with me thorow the middle of a durry puddle, that was nothing but mire and filth, so that for to save my self from falling, and that he might the better bear me thorow the dirt, I was forced to let go his Tayl, and to clasp my arms about the sides of him, he flinging up his Snout, and huffing and puffing with his nostrils, he carried me in his hoggish kind of Gallop, some three or four streets from off that place, grumbling and grunting as he went along, and with his whining and crying, calling the people together to see what he ailed; whilest I perceiving the shame and danger I was like to run, fell off from his back of mine own accord, not regarding when or where I should light.

Well, I got me up as well as I could on my legs, but all bemired, and bewrayed with dirt, being hooted at by the people, and affronted by all the women and children in *Rome*, my face being all-besmeared with dirt, and my cloaths from top to bottom, all playdered over with mire, that I seemed to be thrown out of the belly of some Whale. The people from out their Doors and Windows shouted out so loud, and the boys did so flock about me, that as one that was out of his Wits, and deprived of Judgement, I sought where I might

best hide my self. At last I spied out a house hard by, where I thought I should find some good entertainment. I entered thereinto, and made fast the door, and so bartocadoed my self up close against all that company, that were desirous to see me. But it did not fall out so well with me as I could have wished.

The Master of the house was not willing that I should stay there, but reviling me with odious terms, sought to drive me out with evil language, thinking every hour a year, till he had thrust me out of Doors. For he was jealous of me, and began to suspect, that this was but some trick or stratagem of mine own plotting, having taken hold on that occasion to get into his house, and to bring my purpose more easily to pass. Nor was this my honest Gentleman much out of the way; for the Gentlewoman his Wife were the Breeches, she was Master of the House, a Friend to her own will and pleasure: So that it was no wonder that her Husband would see Visions, and dream of strange apparitions. He no sooner saw me within his doors, but he called all his people about him, and leaving me all alone in the outward porch to the great gate, would not suffer his Servants to do me such kindness as to afford me a bucket of water to wash my self withal.

The Street was full of men and boyes, which did persecure me with shrill shouts and loud cries, calling in a sharp and high Key, Thrust him out! Thrust him out! Why do ye let this foul beast abide with you? Put out this same pickled Pig amongst us. Some honest folk amongst them did pity me. These sought to defend me from their fury, labouring to pacifie that rude rabble.

I was nothing all over but a meer lump of dirt, having like your *Negro's*, no more white about me to be seen, save only my eyes and teeth. It being now late, and all the people gone, I sneaked out in lamentable pickle, throwing my Cloak over my face without being known by any but in regard of that store of dirt, and that evil savor which I bare about me in my cloathes, which way so ever I went they mocked me, but others would excuse me and say, Let the poor fellow alone, it is but a little slipperiness of the Guts, a loosencess of the Hairs, a little laxative oyl that is come from him, which upon occasion may be every mans case as well as his; some stopping their noses as they went along by me would cry out *Fob*; and there was not any that past by me, but had a sting at me: And some would not thicke to ask me, Tell me (friend), how sell you a pound of this Wax? And others, What is the price of your Honey-combs? And a third, Sure this must needs be some Perfumer or other, since he smells so sweet. I answered them all with silence, by which means I past the better along by them.

That which did most trouble me, was to see the Dogs in every street come barking after me, who the faster I went, did so much the more fiercely set upon me, and especially your Mongrel Curs, which followed me close at the heels, and would now and then give me a nip at the Calves of my legs.

At last I was come to my old home, being unseen and unheard of any, had got me up to my lodging. I put my hand in my Pocket, to take out the Key, but could not find it. Then did I feel for it in the other Pocket, but could not meet with it. I cut two or three capers in the air, hoping to hear it gingle but all was on; then did I fall a searching of my

Breeches, to see if happily it had got in betwixt the linings of my Hose; but the Devil a key was there. As I stood making funeral lamentations over my misfortunes, perplexed, and as yet not resolved what I were best to do, I got me to one of my companions, knockt at his Door, which he presently opened unto me; where I did remain while the lock was ripped off from mine. I durst not sit down upon a Trunk that was there in the room, for fear of leaving therein the print of this my error. This unhappy accident could not be kept so secret, but that it must needs be known; for I had scarce shifted my cloths, and washed my self clean, but that my Master knew I was all bedurled. The Servants had told him in what case I was, but none of them could tell him the cause of it. He demanded first of one, and then of another, how this came about, but none could inform him farther than what they had seen.

He presently sent for me, and when we two were all alone, then did he begin to ask me how I came by my fall, and where? I told him that I stood at a Neighbours door, that was right over against *Fabia's* house, watching very diligently, if I could have the opportunity to speak with her; and whilst I was carefully attending this business, her Maid *Nicoleta* came forth, making signs unto me, that I should quickly come away. And being overjoyed with this unexpected good fortune, I would needs cross the Lane, where the way was worst and foulest (because I would not lose time in going about by that which was the cleaner) fetching a nimble leap thinking to pitch sure with my foot upon a Stone, that was not so firmly laid as it should have been, it tottered aside, and so my foot slip, and

and so I fell into the durt, where *I* was most piti-  
fully bemired. Whereupon *Nicoleta*, the peo-  
ple that passed by beginning to flock about me,  
withdrew her self, and went in. So that *I* was in-  
forced to come home, without effecting that *I* went  
for; which did much more grieve me than my fall.  
He then said unto me, *I* suffer more in this than thy  
self. The harm is more mine than thine.

This business (*Guzmanillo*) goes not luckily  
along with thee. It was a work of darkness, thou  
wentst about it late in the evening, in an unfortu-  
nate hour, this disgrace could not have befalln thee  
in any mans service, but mine, nor have lighted so  
unluckily upon any but my self, such is my misfor-  
tune.

Whereunto *I* replied, *I* would not that your  
Lordship should make this ill construction to your  
self, nor would *I* have you to reckon this in the  
number; but *I* am rather perswaded, that it would  
have been worse with us, if this misfortune had not  
befalln me. And *I* am the bolder to tell you so, for  
that her Husband was at that time at home in the  
house, and therefore it makes me to suspect that  
there was some trap laid for me & that *I* was called  
in to some ill end; and say, that the Servants of  
the house should either have spied me, or overheard  
me talking with their Mistress, what doth your Ex-  
cellency think, would then have become of me?  
Assure your self, they would have cudgell'd me  
soundly, and have used me so hardly that *I* should  
not have scaped their fingers, till they had broken  
all my bones, and sent me home without a Nose.  
For my so often rounding of that house, hath cau-  
sed some notice to be taken thereof; and albeit that  
some do think that *I* onely do it for *Nicoleta's*  
sake,



fake, yet many, that do not know the good Love that is between us, are apt to conceive the worst. And I have of late observed, that the good old man *Don Beltran*, hath looked a skew upon me, as if he were not well pleased with me. He was wont heretofore to speak kindly unto me, asking my opinion concerning the Ladies and Gentlewoman of this Court, but now he passes along by me, not so much as once offering to speak to me: and if I put off my Hat and salute him, he looks another way, as if he did not see me, and goes along by me like a Log, without any life or motion towards me at all.

My Master all this while attentive unto me, and ever and anon knitting his Brow, and casting up his eyes, whereby I knew, that I had stung him, and made him to sit musing, as one that had been amazed upon the Report of some strange and sudden accident; I saw all his Cards, and knew what game he had in his hand, and how he would play it, and found by him, that he was afraid both of his reputation and his person, and it would be little for his Honour, if any disgrace should befall him in that house, in regard it was one of the greatest and the noblest allyed in all that City. I taking hold of this occasion, came in a little closer unto him, helping to turn the Key about, when I saw which way it was winding. I spake thus unto him, There is no great heed to be given to that which hath succeeded in this business, Your Excellency may do well to dissemble this business, and to seem to take no notice of what hath past, nor to care a pin for it, For mine own part, I shall ever truly serve you to the death, fall back, fall edge, hap what will hap, all is one to me. Yet withall it is likely

to prove and endless piece of work and an immortal kind of business. Besides, I may not well set my foot any more in those parts, by reason that my haunting of that place is now generally noted, and some stick not to talk too liberally of it.

There are not wanting in *Rome* as good and better ware than she, which may be had with less danger, at an easie rate, and give your Lordship more content and less trouble. If one went another will.

You do not well understand me, said my Master. For there is nothing now at this present more prejudiciall, nor more noted and observed, than any the least spot or weakenesse in a publick person. For men of my quallity are bound to wear such cloathes as besit such Ministers, and not as shall fit best with our own fancie. Otherwise, we shall be taxed by those that cast an eye upon them. And every little indecencie in them, turns to a stain at least, if not a foul blot. A litle breath (you know) will make the biggest Organs go. And your greatest men sound lowdest in the ears of the world, when the noyse of their actions are blown abroad by the bellowes of the peoples breath. I swear unto thee, that if I had not ingaged my self by my word, and more particularly impawned my credit to *Nicoleta*, by giving my faithfull promise, that I would come and visit *Fabia* in person, besides it would grieve me, to be accounted inconstant, or cowardly, blaming me of lightnesse, that my love should be like that of children, or that I went about but to try of what metall she was made, and then to laugh and scoff at her, and that it should be said of me, that I did then turne tail, when I might have seized on my game.

and

and had the Partridge in foot, which I might have trussed, if I would my self, I would not have car'd a button. But since that on our part, we have used all possible diligences, and that they prevail so little, and cost us so much, I will go no more following of that, which flyeth from me; But deal with her, as doth the generous Hawk, by letting his Bird go, by which noblenesse of mine, that ill name shall be quite buried under ground which for my sake hath been raised of her.

This his resolution was my salvation, and praying this his good purpose, the issue was the easier, not so much for his intention, as for my reputation, And therefore I said unto him, your excellencie shall herein do like your self,

This is a Christian consideration, a Daughter worthy the birth of your Lordships brain, and therefore fit that you should father it, and not cast it off. And for the manner how you shall come off from this businesse, leave that to me. This being said, he licensed me from him, saying Farewell *GUZMAN*, and think upon this businesse, which I put into thy hands, as I have already done mine honour. And so we parted.

Chap.

## CHAP. IV.

*Guzman departs from Rome and goes for Florence, a Thief enters into Friendship with him, that under that colour, he might rob him.*

**I** was now become the common Table-talk of all the Town, my Lord, his Pages, and other his ordinary servants, took liberty and licence of language. For what between jest and earnest, they did so nip me with their witty jests, and pay me home with their Satyricall lashes, that your Mariners do not more strain their tacklings in a tempest, than they did wrest and wring the very bowells within me.

One day as I pass along the street, many little children, as well as the greater lubbers, did persecute me, laughing and scoffing at me, with strange out-cries, and loud shoutings, making a most hideous noise. I took up stones, and would have thrown at them; but a young man of mine own stature, quality and years, well behaved, but somewhat hot and choleric, came running in upon me, and held my arm so fast, that I was not able to move a finger to do them any hurt; yet did he deal so honestly with me, as to take part with me against them all, and to defend me against this their rage and fury, drawing in two or three other of his friends, that came along in his company, making resistance both in deed, and in words, against those Hobber-dehoyes, which  
like

*Guzman  
persecuted  
by boyes  
and chil-  
dren.*

like so many Hob-goblins, or little Devils, did haunt me up and down from street to street, and from house to house. And having now quieted and layd these unruly spirits, he took me by the hand, bringing me himself alone home to my lodging, leaving his Companions behind to keep back the boyes.

When he had brought me thus home, *I* would fain have had him to stay with me, that *I* might have fastened some Kindnesse upon him, and have done him all the curtesie and honour the house could afford. But could by no means get him to accept thereof.

Then did *I* intreat him, that he would tell me his name, as also where was his lodging, that *I* might come to kisse his hands, and give him thanks for the un-deserved kindnesse *I* had receiv'd from him; but we would neither acquaint me with the one, or the other; promising to return some other time to visit me. Only he told me, that he did bear particular affection, as well to my person, as my Countrey; for that *I* was a Spaniard, and that he was as sensible of this disgrace of mine, as if it were his own. And with this we took leave each of other. *I* came home with my colour so changed, my eyes so inflamed, and my understanding so confounded, that (not considering well what *I* did) comming just in the nick, when dinner was a serving up, *I* would needs go up with the rest of the Pages to wait at his Lordships table. My Master perceived *I* was inwardly much troubled; Whereupon he demanded of me, what was the cause of this my perturbation? *I* being taken thus on a sudden, having no leisure to fall then a coining, and having never a new lye in store, told him all the whole truth of

of the businesse, and every particular passage thereof : those that waited at the board, not being able to forbear laughing, one claps me the cover of the Cup that he held in his hand before his face, another the Plate that he held between his Thumbs, a third the Napkin wherewith he served as Sewer, and those that were empty handed, laying one hand on their face, and with the other stopping their mouth, their hearts being ready to burst in their bellies, hidde them (for fear of blurting in my Lords face) as fast out of the room, as their legs would carry them. And they past so farre therein beyond the bounds of modestie, that his excellencie was somewhat moved thereat, and call'd out aloud unto them to be quiet. I was so ashamed and so confounded in my self, that for all the Masters, and women that were in the world, I would never more take upon me to treat of their love matters, nor be a Broker in that Kind for the greatest Prince in Christendom.

The storm being now layd, my Master willed me to get me down to dinner.

Now I durst not go (as before) out of doores but by night. So that all day long I kept my self close in my Chamber, spending my time, either in reading good bookes, or playing upon some instrument, or talking with my friends. Inso-much, that this retiring of my self, wrought in those of the house a new respect; and in those abroad, silence.

Now every mans tongue was still, and now by absenting my self from their sight, all these my businesse were forgotten. The young man came often to visit me, that had taken my part, when I was so vilely mockt and abused by the Boyes.

H:

He made me many offers of his purse and his person; he acquainted me with his Countrey, his Name; and the cause of his coming to *Rome*. I held my self bound to do him all good offices, giving credit to all that he told me; at last he asked me, whether I would take the paines to walk along with him to the palace? I excused my self unto him, and told him the cause why I had retired my self, and how well it sped with me.

This young fellow was as very a Wagg as my self, much of my age, and his Beard (like mine) newly budding forth; he presently caught hold of these words, and said thus unto me.

*Travel  
yieldeth  
much de-  
light.*

*Sennor Guzman*, you have carryed your self with that discretion as is proper unto you, and may truly be termed your own. If I, Sir, were in your case, rather than I would be thus mew'd up, and for so long a time, I would wear out this disgrace by travelling abroad, rounding all *Italy* before I would return. In which travel, you shall not onely take singular content; but you shall likewise obtain your intended end, and with more advantage than you can possibly pretend, by this your private shutting up of your self in your Lords house.

He represented unto me the great excellencies of *Florence*, the great beauty of *Genoa*, and the incomparable government of *Venice*. Whereupon I got me up as soon as it was day, and brought my Lord his cloathes; to whom, while he was making him ready, I gave an account of this my resolution. He liked very well of it, holding it a commendable, and an honest course, that it would make much for my good, and stop all those mouths, that were now so clamorous against me; he told

me,

me,  
shou  
trien  
I  
for d  
that  
likin  
*Italy*  
had h  
thenc  
side,  
well  
rily c  
and n  
Fr  
in ord  
came  
If  
I hea  
and f  
good  
put  
me  
or par  
was n  
in the  
the ho  
for be  
guage  
hand  
of a f  
conve  
that t  
my L

me, that if *I* had a minde to go into *France* I should have Letters of recommendations to his friends there in my favour.

*I* kist his hands, and thank't his Excellencie for these his favours towards me; and told him, that (if it might stand with his good leave and liking) *I* was very desirous to travell thorow all *Italy*, and especially see *Florence*, whereof *I* had heard such large commendations; and from thence go to *Sienna*, where *Pompeyo* did then reside, one that was my especial good friend, and well known to his Lordship, for we did ordinarily converse together by our Letters, though we and never seen one another.

From that day forward, *I* began to set things in order for my journey; my new acquaintance came often to visit me.

*I* suspected no trecherie, *I* received good deeds, *The quality of a cunning Thief.*  
*I* heard good words, *I* saw a man in an honest and fashionable habit, who sought to give me good counsell, and seemed to favour me, who had put his life in danger, to save mine, who visited me (as *I* thought) without any hope of interest, or particular profit to himself. He told me, that he was my Countrey-man, an *Andeluzian*, born in the Citie of *Sevill*, a Principall Gentleman of the house of the *Sayavedras*? But all were lyes; for he was of *Valencia*; yet he spake the language of *Castile* excellent well. He was a handsome well-favoured young man, well spoken, of a fair behaviour, and a fine Companion in his conversation; But all this cunning carriage was, that thereby he might have the freer accessse into my Lords house, and into my Chamber, to filch

D d d                      from



from thence whatsoever he could handsomely finger.

He came the other day to visit me, and finding that I had altered my habit, and put my self into another kind of fashion of cloathes, differing from my wonted wear, he startled, and stood afterwards as one amazed. At last he askt me the reason of this sudden alteration. I told him, that I had taken his counsell, and that I was resolved to go to *Sienna*, where I should meet with *Pompeyo*, a great and intire friend of mine, and from thence to passe for *Florence*, and so afterwards to visit all *Italy*.

When he heard me say so, he seemed to be very glad thereof, much commending this my resolution. He was very diligent in observing how I did make up my Trunks, putting his helping hand thereunto. He marked where I had layd a Set of Gold Buttons, a chain, and other Jewells that I had, and above three hundred Spanish Pistoles that I carried along with me.

When I had lockt, and nailed up my Trunks, I layd up the keyes upon my Beds head, which he observed, and as he and I was talking of my journey and telling him that I purposed to send away my Truncks before, and that I would stay some fix or seven dayes in *Rome*, to take leave of my friends, by which time they would be at *Sienna* where I should find them ready for me, when I came thither, in that very instant there came one of my Lords servants unto me, and told me, that there were some beneath did inquire for me, and did much desire to speak with me. And because my Chamber was out of order, unswept, and not fir, by reason it was so foul, to receive any visit, I

went

went down to see who they were.

In the *interim*, Sayavedra had opportunity to take the print of all my keys, in certain pieces of some Wax Candles ends that lay about the Chamber. Those that sought for me, were certain Muleters, or Carriers, which came for my luggage; they came up, I delivered it unto them, and they carried it away.

Sayavedra  
craftily  
colours  
Guzman,

This businesse dispatched, my friend and I continued talking together: and because he did not offer to go away, I thought he did it out of courtesy, and the friendship that was between us, and that it was out of his love to keep me company for that little while I was to stay. Whereas indeed he onely stayed in Town, till counterfeited keys were fashioned by the Smiths hand.

He continued his Visits with me for three or four dayes together: and when he thought he had made all cecck-sure; he came one Evening to my Chamber, feigned himself very sick, and seemed to be as it were in a Lethargie, or the like drowzie disease; complaining, that he was scarce able to stand upon his leggs, desiring me that I would give him leave to go home to his lodging (when I saw he would needs be gone) I desired that he would acquaint me with his lodging, that I might come and visit him, and send him some physicall curiosities, fit for sick folks, to relish his cast, and comfort his stomack, or that I might serve him in any thing else, wherein I might be usefull unto him. He told me that he lodged in the house of a certain Gentlewoman, that lived very secret and private; but in case this his sickness should not suddenly leave him, or that he should chance to grow worse & worse, that then he would advise me thereof

that I might come and visit him. And so taking his leave of me, that very day he took post, and rode towards *Sienna*, where he found his Companions, that went along with the Muleters, that they might see where, and to whom these Trunks were consigned.

Sayavedra  
rides Post  
to *Sienna*,  
and finely  
robs Guzman of his  
Trunks.

When he was come to *Sienna*, the people seeing a Gentleman come in that good equipage by post, took him to be some principall Spaniard; He alighted at the chiefeft Inne that was in all the City, where presently his Companions came about him, who had there attended his comming, and giving it out that they were his servants, they waited diligently upon him.

As soon as he was arrived, he sent one of them to *Pompeyo*, to give him to understand, that he was newly come to Town. When my friend had received this message, and knew that I was in the Town, he was so over-joyed, that going to put on his cloak, it was a good while ere he could find the way to unfold it, and to set it right upon his shoulders, through his too much hast, and longing desire that he had to see me. Being come to the Inne, where *Sayavedra* had put on my person, he took it very unkindly, complaining much, that I should make him such a stranger, and deal so unfriendly with him, as not to alight at his house, which I might command as freely as mine own. Which *Sayavedra* having excused as well as he could; they afterwards fell into discourse, talking of his journey, and some other things of *Rome*, untill it was night.

At which time *Pompeyo*, for the present, taking his leave of him, that he might leave him to his rest: *Sayavedra* gave (in his presence) the key  
of

of one of his Truncks, to one of his servants, saying unto him withall; Do you hear, Sirrah? Go you along with *Sennor Pompeyo*, and take me out such a suit which you shall find in such apart, for I will put on that to morrow.

They went away together, and his servant punctually performed that which his Master had commanded him; uncording, in the presence of *Pompeyo*, the very self same Trunck, whereunto he was directed, and taking forth the foresaid suit of clothes, he locks me the Trunck, and putting up the key in his pocket, he comes his way. That night *Pompeyo* sent him a very good supper, a neat collation of Comfits, and sweet meats, and admirable rich Wines, wherewith when *Sayavedra* and his fellows had suppt, and had eat and drunk their fill, they got them to bed, where they so soundly slept, that they did not wake till the next day.

That morning *Pompeyo* came somewhat early to visit him, but his servants intreated him to hold his Master excused; for he had not taken any rest all that night, and was now newly faine asleep. He told them, he was very sorry that he had so ill a night of it; he would not therefore now trouble him, but would go his way and come anon. But they would by no means give way to that, telling him, that their Master would be very angry with them, when he should know that he had been there, and that none of them had either so much wit, or manners to tell him of it. Whereupon, they went presently up into his Chamber, and signified unto him, that *Sennor Pompeyo* was come to see him. He was very glad of it, and commanding one of them to set ready a Chair for him, sent

down another to intreat him to come up.

*Pompeyo*, as soon as he came in, asked him how he did, and what was the cause of his last nights indisposition? He told him, that for want of use, he was so weary with riding post, that he found himself somewhat distempered, his body being overheated, and that he had a purpose to be let blood.

*Pompeyo* was very earnest with him, that he would change his lodging, and take his house for his Inne. *Sayavedra* excused himself, telling him, that his servants were unruly and given to disorder, and that he was resolved to put them away, and to take new within these eight or nine dayes, and that then he would promise him to receive his courtesie at his hands, which he had so kindly offered unto him: Intreating him in the mean while, that he would do him the kindnesse, as to send his truncks by one of his own servants, because he had no great trust in any of his own; and fearing, that giving them the keys to fetch such things as he needed, they might put some tricks upon him.

*Pompeyo* liked well of it, and thought that he did therein very wisely and discreetly, onely he seemed not to be so well pleased, that he should treat of taking physick in an Inne. But resting contented with the promise that he had made him, he performed what he desired, and was no sooner come to his lodging but he laded certain Porters with his Truncks, and sending one of his servants along with them, he saw them safely delivered, to *Sayavedra*. He sent him that day a very dainty dinner; and these two friends having taken leave of each other for that night, that they might go to bed in a good hour, *Sayavedra* and his Compani-

ons conveyed secretly into another house that which they had brought thither, and taking post, departed for *Florence*; whither when they were come, they divided the spoyle amongst them.

Sayavedra  
and his  
Compani-  
ons post a-  
way to Flo-  
rence,  
where they  
divide the  
spoyle.

These copartners, where their crafts. Masters, subtil fellows, and stout Rogues; the principall plotter and contriver of all these pissing projects, was a *Bolonian* born, he was a great Scholar, and a very learned Doctor in this kind of Art; his name was *Alexandro Benivoglio*

This *Alexander* was a notable thief, nimble finger'd, and of a strong and able body, and a notorious Rogue

Now because he was the Ring-leader, and the onely principall man amongst them, and that did all in all, he made *Sayavedra* content himself with a little, giving him some, but the worser sort of of my cloathes. And thinking that he could not remain there in safety, he got him into the *Popes* territories, where his father was *Alcalde*. So that he posted to *Bologna*, carrying away with him the Buttons, the Jewels, and the Pistolets, retiring himself home to his fathers house, and the rest of his fellowes, that shared with him, fled to *Trent*, as they afterward told me in *Bologna*, and there they disappeared themselves.

When *Pompeyo* returned to visit me, not finding my *Stratna* there, nor any of his fellowes, he askt my Host of the house what was become of them? He told him, that the night before they went away from thence with their Truncks, but whither they knew not. He took this for an ill signe; and suspecting what this might chance to prove in the end, used great and extraordinary diligence in the search of them; and having notice that they rode post by  
the

the way of *Florence*, he sent Hue and cry after them, with a warrant to apprehend them.

Those few dayes that I afterwards stayed in *Rome*, I was jocund and merry, and did not so much as once dream of any such roguerie intended against me. And out of a great desire that I had to know how my sick friend did, whether he had recovered his health, or were in worse case than when he left me, I stayd four dayes waiting for him, but seeing he came not at me, nor sent unto me, I continued four days longer in Town, making inquirie after him amongst some of his Countrey men, giving them all the marks and signes, whereby they might know, or at least ghesse at the man; but this was to look to hear a *Magnificat* at Matens, or to seek after the man in the Moon, for there was no such kind of thing to be heard of. I did verily believe then that he was very sick, if not dead, and so taking leave of my Lord Embassadour, I resolved the next day following to begin my journey.

My Lord grieved for my departure, clapt both his hands upon my shoulders, and taking a chain of Gold from off his neck, which he did usually wear, and putting it on mine, he told me, while he was doing me this honour, *Guzman*, I bestow this upon thee, that thou mayst, as oft as thou look'st upon it, have me in remembrance, as one that wishes thee all good. He gave me good store of Crowns, and laid his Command upon me, that wheresoever I should hap to be, I should from time to time give him account of my health, and how things did succeed with me, assuring me, that none should rejoice more in my well-doing, than himself; hoping, when I had made an end of my travel, to see me

me again in his House, whither I should alwaies be most welcome.

I kissed his hand, he bestowed his blessing upon me, and with it a good high-way Nag. This done, I bid my fellowes farewel. and rode my way, making use of this Nag in all my Travel.

My Lord and his Servants were ready to melt for the sorrow they had conceived of my Departure; He, because he loved me, and saw he must now lose me, and would doubtles find a want of me, for such Services as I could best do him, and himself took most content in; And they, because I was alwaies their good friend, never did them ill Offices, told no tales of them, but did further them all that I could, so that I was generally well-beloved of them all, for by doing them real courtesies, and in that free and friendly fashion, I could not but gain the greater love.

And if that which so unfortunately befel me in *Fabias* house, had not been divulged abroad by that Aspin-leved tongue of *Nicoleta*, who babbled forth the jest which was put upon me by her Mistress in the back Court of her house, I had never forsaken that Commodity which I found in my Lords House, nor his Lordship have lost so good a Servant:

I went out of *Rome* like a Prince, well entreated, and better provided, having store of Crowns to spend abroad, till the durt I had taken should become dry and be rubb'd out. There is no such remedy as time and Travel to wear out unlucky chances.

I was now on my way towards my friend *Pompeys*, who looked for me every hour, having provided for me a neat lodging, with a handsome bed,  
and



and Table, and all other furniture sitting thereunto. I came at last to *Siena*, and inquiring after him, they directed me to his house; thither I came: I found him within, he received me, I cannot say whether more cheerfully or more heavily, sometimes shewing a joyful, sometimes a troubled countenance. I requested him to help me to my Trunks, that I might change my clothes.

Hereupon he was inforced to open all the whole business unto me, putting me in good hope, that there were such diligences used, and that good course already taken, that he did not doubt but that I should have all again, and lose nothing of that which they had thus cunningly stolen from me. I was strook with this blow to the very heart; and was thereupon so sad, being thus stripped of all in a strange Country, far from my Friends, and forced to seek new, having but little store of money in my Purse, and no more but one suit of cloaths only my back, and two Shirts in my *Port-manscan*.

Well, when I saw how the world went, and that there was no help for it; I pluckt up my Spirits, set a good face on the matter.

While my Friend and I were sitting at Table, anon after we had dined, as we were talking of this misfortune of mine, and the cunning cartiage of these thieves that had thus robbed me, I might hear a great trampling of the Servants of the house, and some others, who making hast up the stairs, came in and told us; We have him, we have him, the principal thief is taken, and the theft confest.

This put new courage into me, we rose up from the Table, to meet and salute this Officer: I asked him how the World went? He told me it was like

to go well. Then I farther demanded of him, in what manner? he replyed, that one of the theeves was taken; and that he would discover all. All my joy was quite quenced with the water of this bad news.

*Pompeyo* called for his Cloak, and went presently to the judge of the Court; but all this did me no good. For he neither denied the Theft, nor confessed that he was in the fault. He said that the others had committed it, and that he was but their Servant, and that they had only bestowed upon him one poor suite of clothes, which he sold and spent, partly in *Florence*, and upon the way in his return to *Sienna*.

Upon this confession (and other considerations which offered themselves unto the Judge) he was sentenced to publique shame, and to remain a banished Man from that City for a certain time.

While this business was a handling, one of *Pompeyos* servants stood diligently waiting there, expecting the issue. And vvhhen he had his sentence given him, as if he had brought my Truncks along with him, he came running up in all hast to my Chamber laughing all the way as he came, & as jocund as apy crying out aloud, O *Sennor Guzman*, laugh and be merry, the Thief that helped to Rob you is condemned to open shame, if you vwill see him, hy you to the vvindowv, and look out quickly, for it cannot be long ere he come. O that this Fool, this Block-head, this Coxcome had been mine ovvn servant, or in some place, vvhere I might have had my vvill of him, that I might have pumeld him about the pate, bob'd him about the nose, strook out the teeth of him, and beaten the jayv bones of this Assc so sore, that he should not have been a-ple for a moneth after to fall to his feeding. I vvas mightily

Guzman  
relleth a  
tale of a  
stout Judge  
as a foolish  
Attorney.

mightily out of patience at these his foolish words, O thou Traytor, (said I to my self) seest thou in what poor case I am, and in a manner quite undone, and dost thou go about to comfort me with such a poor satisfaction as this? I was ready almost to burst with choler; but even then, there did offer it self unto my remembrance just such another comfort as this; which was told me for a truth had passed in *Sevill*; which made my sides to tickle again with laughing, the very thought whereof had made me quite forget my former anger. And this it was.

A Judge of that City, by especial Order from the supreme Councill, took a delinquent, that had been a famous falsifier of Deeds, had often counterfeited his Majesties hand, and feigned many false Patents, by means whereof he got a great deal of money in divers parts, and at divers times; for the which he was by the sayd Judge, condemned to be hanged; notwithstanding this offender was a Church-man, and therefore did appeal from his Sentence, challenging his privilege of being tryed by the Ecclesiasticall power, as by his competent Judge. But the Judge being resolved, commanded to hang him out of hand.

The Ordinary, threatening the Judge with Excommunications, and that in the Churches there should be *Cessatio a Divinis*. But the Delinquent was brought to the Gallows, and when he was upon the Ladder, and had the Rope about his neck, there came a certain Notary to the foot of the Ladder who had solicited this businesse, and laying his hand upon his brest, said unto him,

Sir, you see, all possible diligence hath been used, and not any one essentiall thing left out, that might make

make for you; but this (you see) will not hold water, nor do us that good we thought it would have done; For, as you may perceive, the Judge (out of a wilfull humour) hath proceeded *de facto* with you. But I vow and swear unto you (by that my Place and Credit which I hold in the world) that he hath done you therein a most notorious wrong, and contrary to all Law and Justice; but seeing it cannot now be otherwise, and that for the present there is no help for it, I shall wish you, Sir, to arm your self with patience, and to take your hanging quietly, and put your trust in me: for I will stay with you at the last, I will not leave you till I see you hanged. And leave it to me, to right the wrong he hath done you.

Mee thinks, this poor Clyent that suffered, might very well have said to his Attourney, I should like it much better (Sir) that you would come up here and take my place, and give me leave to go and follow mine own businesse.

My thief was freed, he had confest who were the principal Offenders, and which way they went; for which cause, as also that he had rounded the Citie on an Ass, and had been put to open shame, he was set at liberty; leaving me (poor man) in the wretched prison of poverty: Where I must now take my leave of you, and bid you all Good night.

---

FINIS.



THE  
ROGUE,  
OR THE  
SECOND PART  
OF THE  
L I F E  
OF  
GUZMAN de ALFARACHE.

---

*The second Book.*

---



---

LONDON,  
Printed by *Henry Hills*, in the  
year MDCLV:

THE  
ROULE

OR THE

ROULETTE

AND

LIFE

OF THE

ROULETTE

AND

THE

ROULETTE



# THE ROGUE,

OR,

The second part of the Life of  
GUZMAN de *Alfarache*.

*The second Book.*

*That which befel Guzman in Italy.*



When I was in my Prosperity I had many Friends, all men did desire my Love, made much of me, feasted me, and did offer their service unto me, but my moneys failing, they also failed; so that their Friendship, and my money, had an end at once.

Ecc

That



That little wealth that I had was stoln from me, which was my undoing. I staid some daies, (though but a few) in my friends house, in which short time, he fell off from me by degrees, finding at last, that I had but a slippery Eel in my hand, and that little courtesie which he had shewed me, was not so much out of any hearty good will, as for fear, lest I should seek to recover my lost goods of him, by course of Law.

I read his thoughts in his looks, and did seriously resent his double dealing. & these fair but false shews of Love; wherfore perceiving how much perplexed he was, and how willing to be rid of me, I resolv'd with my self to go for *Florence*, I imparted this my purpose unto him, telling him, that I much desired to see that City, for the great commendation that I had heard of it, and those famous sights that were there to be seen. He demanded of me, when I was minded to begin my journey, but never asked what I wanted.

I made all the hast I could to get me gone from *Siena*, that I might leave *Pompeyo* well-pleased therewith; who I knew, would never think himself well at ease, till he were well eased of me: well, I took my leave of him, and so all alone set forward on my journey, accompanied with a world of melancholy thoughts, attended by a multitude of cares, and therefore I rode plotting and devising with my self, how I might make them lighter.

I had not gone thus musing many miles, but it was my hap to light on *Sayavedra*, who had left *Siena* to comply with his banishment. Whom I no sooner saw, but my kind heart began to melt, and I could not chuse but take compassion of him,  
and

and must needs salute him; I could not for my life refrain from speaking lovingly unto him, nor he abstain from receiving me with tears, he bowed himself to kiss my surtop, earnestly beseeching me, that I would be pleased to forgive him, rendring me likewise thanks, that during the time of his Imprisonment, I never offered to accuse him; excusing himself also, that he had not, as soon as he was set at Liberty, come to visit me, laying the fault thereof in his lack of boldness, and the largeness of his offence. Yet, for to make satisfaction and payment of this his debt, he would become my slave, and do me faithful service all the dayes of his life; I, who ever knew him to be a man, that had both a strong brain, and a nimble wit, which did make him fit for any employment, I was the more willing to accept of his Offer; and so taking him into my service, we jogg'd on along by little and little like a couple of good Fellows, talking of divers things on the way.

And albeit I was not ignorant, that he was a notorious thief, and a notable cunning Rogue, yet I held it the less inconveniency of the two, to have a Knave, than a Fool, to my man. And therefore knowing him so well as I did, I thought it as good, if not better to entertain a Knave that I knew, as a knave, that I knew not; also for that I had not much now to lose, I admitted him into my Service. He askt me (as soon as I had entertained him) which way I meant to take? I told him, I was for *Florence*, led thither out of a desire that I had to satisfy my longing, by seeing that City, whereof I had heard so much. Whereunto my Servant replied, and said; Sir, whatsoever you have heard thereof, I make no question, when you come

there, but your self will confesse, report hath been too short with you, he made me a large relation of the foundation, Government, and Civil Wars, and beauty of *Florence*, until we were come as neer night, as we were to our Inn, whereunto we went to lodge. And having there well rested and refreshed our selves, we got up betimes in the morning, and when we came within sight of *Florence*, I was so over-joyed, that I was not able to expresse it, so fair and so beautiful did it a far off present it self unto me, a more pleasing sight did mine eyes never see; But when I was entred therinto, and saw the spaciousness of the streets, how straight and level they were, how plain and smooth, paved all with clean hewen stones of goodly fair marble, and their houses built with beautiful stones, so costely, so curious, so neatly polished, so artificially wrought, and with such a deal of skill and cunning in the Architecture thereof, I was so confounded, that I could not tell what to think of it. *Florence* is the flower of the world. But because night was now growing on, and that the day would not befriend us any longer, I was faine to retire my self to my lodging. And we were not slack in hastening to our Inn, whether when we were come, we were so neatly and so daintily entertained, that I cannot so much indear it, as it truly deserueth. Such plenty of provision, such cleanliness in their lodging-chambers, such sweetness in their linnen, such diligent attendance, such affable language, and such good usage, did I never meet withall elsewhere in all my life.

When the morning was come, I called to *Sayavedra* to give me my clothes, and for that he was so well acquainted with that Ciry, I willed him to make

himself ready to go along with me, that he might show me all, whatsoever was of any note, and held (as curiosities) to be worth the seeing.

---

CHAP. V.

*Guzman goes to Bologna in pursuit of Alexandro, who had stoln his trunks from him, and going about to imprison Alexandro, himself was clapt up.*

**I**N Florence, I did eat out that horse which my Lord Embassadour had bestowed on me at my departure. If this heretick, *Necessity*, had not kicked me out of Town, I should never have gone from thence. All was delight. In a word, in all places of the City wheresoever we came, we met with nothing but laudable exercises, and honest recreations. There might a man see many young Gallants, pompous in apparel, and richly clad and many fair Ladies and Gentlewomen, who wanted no setting forth for curious and costly dressings, with whom these young blouds did dance. Whose tyres on their heads were so daintily adorned, their gowns on their backs so richly imbroydered, and their *Chapines* to their feet, so plated with silver and beset with precious stones, that they did ravish both the eyes and the Souls of as many as did look upon them.

It grieved me very much to leave *Florence*, nor yet knew I, why I should stay any longer there, unless it were to spend that poor little store of money, that I had yet left me, and that chain, which

the Lord Embassadour my Master, gave me at my farewell, as a token of his Love; and as it was given me with a great deal of love, so did it exceedingly grieve me that I must shortly part so unkindly with it. I would, if I could, have kept it rather than my life, and never have parted from it. But patience (quoth I to my self) I will do the best I can; and more I cannot. I considered with my self, what would now become of me, and what course I were best to take, for to supply and relieve my wants. God help me. How heavy is the heart when the purse is light? And therefore we say, a heavy purse, makes a light heart. What little comfort do we take in the world? and how faint and feeble are the pleasures of this life, to him whose purse-strings are too weak? and more particularly to one that is in a strange Country, and that hath put on a resolution with himself to forget his lewd courses, and not to live as he had done, by tricks and by shifts; yet not knowing how to gain a penny, and wanting the means how to come by money; having no neer acquaintance with any, to presume of such kindness from them, being far from my Friends, and further from any the least intention or purpose to cheat or cozen any man, if I would have run that course, I needed not to have taken such a deal of care and trouble in the business. For I had my wits about me; and a hand that was able to find me work all the year long; I could not want (if I listed my self) to pick out a living wheresoever I should come. For (thanks be to God for it) what I had once learned it was mine own for ever. I never lost it, if I once had it. Only I might at first be a little to seek for want of use, but the tools of my trade were never

never out of my hand, but alwaies carried them with me, whithersoever I went. I departed from Rome with a full purpose to become an honest man, and fall back, fall edge, come good, or come bad, all welcome, as is pleased God; for I had a great mind to continue these my good desires, and to remain firm in this so honest a resolution.

I assure thee, that the more I walked up and down that City, the more desirous I was to plant there my Pillars, and not to seek for a *Plus ultra*. But I was in a manner blown up, and all my money was almost spent. I thought it good counsel to uphold my honour, and to depart from thence, both to my credit and content, before that being forced thereunto by necessities, I should come to discover my wants, and be bound to stay still there, for lack of means to be gone. I acquainted *Sapavedra* with this my purpose. For by this time, I knew well enough that he was likely to be mine onely help at a pinch, my strong Fort, and the only trench whereunto I might with safety retire, and that I could not have met with such another companion in all the world for my purpose.

He said unto me. Seeing there is no remedy, but we must be gone, it is not much material which gate we got out at. Let us (if you will be ruled by me) take the way that leads to *Bologna*; for besides, that it is neer at hand, and that we shall there see that famous University, we may chance likewise to have the good luck to meet with *Alexandro Bentivoglio*, that Master of mine, who went away with the most part of your goods. For if we hap to find him there (as I verily believe we shall) it will be an easy matter for you to recover your own.

I took this counsel, and was now fully resolved to begin my journey; awaie goes *Sayavedra*, and I together, making directly for *Bologna*; we came thither that night, but slept very little, for we spent the most part of it in plotting and casting about how we should bear our selves in this business. *Sayavedra* saies unto me, Sir I hold it not so fit, that I should be seen herein at all, especially now at this my first flight, but rather to lye close a while, till we may see where it should be best to give the wound; and when we shall come to know where the game lyes, and that there is any hope of doing good, then let us let flie, and strike it dead. For if *Alexander* be in the Town, and should know that I am here, (which he cannot choose, if I stir abroad, being so well known as I am,) hee will question me, wherefore I came hither, and with whom? And that known, he will absent himself forthwith from the Citie, and so we shall be defeated of our purpose. Or if he chance but to suspect, that I had a finger in this businesse, and that I was the cause of this journey, and his shame, there is no way but one with me, he will surely kill me; so that neither of these two will advantage us any thing, nor is fitting for us to be adventured on. Besides, if this web must come to be woven in the Loom of Justice, I must be the Master shreed to be wrought upon, there is no avoiding of it. The best course then to be taken, I conceive to be this; that to morrow morning you make inquiry after him, and by one means or other (with the best secrecie you can) seek first to know him, and to take particular notice of his person; That done, we will consult thereof afresh, and govern  
our

our selves therein, according as occasion and time shall serve.

I did not like amiss of this, we thought it was good wholsome counsel. Well; as he had advised me, I set my self to work, I walkt up and down the Town, and after the treading of some few steps, not being troubled (as fortune would have it) to tire out my legges in the search of him, it was my good hap to have him pointed out unto me with the finger, telling me; Lo, that's the man. Which direction I needed not, for the cloathes on his back did speak what he was, and without others teaching, could tell me, This is *Alexandro*. He was standing amongst other young men at the Church door.

He had at that time a doublet of mine on his back of cloth of silver, and a jerkin drest with Amber, and other rich perfumes, cut and flast clean thorow, and lined with the same cloth of silver, sutable to the doublet, and richly laid with lace after the *Sevillian* fashion, and eight Buttons of Gold wrought upon Amber, to make it sit the closer to the collar, all which a Gentleman of *Naples* presented me withal, for a certain dispatch, that I had procured for him, by solliciting his business: with my Lord Embassidour.

When I came to know mine own, and saw another man wear it before my face, I could have found in my heart to have stabb'd him, and presently stript him of it, but I held my hand, and said with my self, No, *Guzman*, no; This must not be so; Better it were, that this thy thief should be converted and live. For if thou let him live, he may chance to pay thee; But if thou kill him, thou art sure to pay for him. If there be any order or law in gaming, and if the dice runn true, if the cards  
be



not packt, but are well shuffled and cut, and that there be fair play, unlesse the devill be in it, or my luck exceeding bad, all the world cannot win the game from me. For I have cards enough in mine own hand to carry it. He is taken in the manner, the theft found about him, he cannot possibly deny it. I swear I will put him to his neck-verse, and make him to confesse upon the Rack, who put him into those fine cloathes, or in what Fair or Market he bought them.

Well, I got me home to my lodging, acquainting *Sayavedra* with what I had seen; when we had din'd, we pitcht the hey wherewith we were to catch this Coney; many designes we had, many means propounded to come by our own. We concluded in the end, that of all other means *Peace* were the best: And a bad Accord, is better than a good Plea. So that at last, we grew to his conclusion, that I, by a third person, should use some means to have his father talkt withall, making him acquainted with the businesse, and the whole manner how it was carried, giving him a large account of every particular thing, remitting my self to his good will and pleasure, how he in his own discretion should think meet I deserv'd to be dealt withall, and that he would not enforce me (considering my fair manner of proceeding with him) to recover mine own by rigour of Law, being there was *Evidentia facti*; besides many other pregnant proofs to be produced, that these goods were mine. And so I did, as we had devised; having made choyce of a discreet person, who should secretly and with sitting language, deliver thus much unto him. But he was so farr from compounding the businesse, that he made little reckoning of it, deeming

deeming it as an *affront* done unto his honour, and a most defamation.

When I receiv'd this answer, I resolv'd to talk with some Lawyer; to whom I opening my case, He plainly told me; Sir, it is well enough known in this Town, what manner of man *Alexandro* is, as also his lewd and idle courses, which in some other place, would be a sufficient information against him. Besides, there is so much truth in that which you urge against him, that I would advise you to frame an information against him, and to desire justice.

Whereupon, I being very desirous that a bill should be exhibited against him, he presently (according to my information) drew one out, which I forthwith presented to the *Auditore del Torrone*, who is there the judge of all Causes Criminal. But, whether it were immediately from the Judge himself, or from the Notarie, I know not, but sure I am, that this business of mine was instantly over all the Town, and particular notice was given thereof unto *Alexandro's* father: he hies him in all hast to the Judge, and there accusing me for this my bold attempt, and inconsiderate rashness, (as it pleas'd him to term it) he formed a complaint against me, that I had defamed, and dishonoured his House, and that therefore he was of purpose come unto him to desire his lawful favour, and that he would be pleas'd to do him justice, to the end that I might be severely punished for this my presumption. I know not how, but the matter was so carried between them, that it had been better for me to have held my peace. And in many places, as a man is befriended, so his cause is ended.

The

The Judge did limit me a prefixed time for my proofs, but so short that it was not possible for me to make my information according to that scantling, when I did allege for my self, that the information was to come from *Sienna*, where the theft was committed.

Well, being not able to bring in my proofs in so short a time, my Bill of Complaint was thrown out of the Court, and held as a thing of no validity or force in Law, and that of the adverse party, took place against me; declaring there in Court, that *I* by this my Petition had framed an infamous Libell against his son, by meanes whereof, his House, and his honour was much defamed; adding, that *I* did it wittingly and willingly, impudently and maliciously, aggravating the matter against me with all the odious termes they could devise; Alleging farther against me, that for as much as his son, was a quiet, honest, and peaceable Gentleman, and of a good both report, and life, *I* did deserve *I* know not what exemplary punishment, hanging, burning, and drowning, all was too little. Which things, when they were read unto me, *I* said to my self; These men may have healthy bodies, but *I* am sure they have sick souls; they may have good purses, but *I* finde (to my cost) they have bad Consciences. *I* was careless, (as one that was confident of a good cause) and as *I* was afterwards going about my business, *I* was taken up in the midst of the street by an Arrest, and presently carried away to prison. They punished me as an unmannerly man of my tongue, a liar, and a lewd companion. *I* had spent my moneys, lost my goods, put in prison, gyves clapt on my legs, treated with evil language, upbraiding me with many

Guzman  
clapt in  
prison.

many foul and uncivil reproaches, without suffering me to open my mouth in mine one defence. When I would have answered their objections by writings, my Proctor forsook me, my Solicitour would not come at me, my Advocate refused to plead for me.

A prison is a true and lively picture of Hell it self; my advice is to leave off these idle thoughts of going to Law, sit down rather with losse, and live in peace: For it is better that the world should say of thee that thou art a patient wise man, than a revengeful fool. Neglect him that hath wronged thee, and let him go for a knave as he is; for thou canst not take a fuller revenge of him, nor punish him more than to let him passe for an idle fool, and follow thine own businesse.

*Good counsel for those that will live at quiet.*

## CHAP. VI.

*Guzman being freed out of prison, falls a gaming, gets money;*

WHEN I came out of prison, I got me to my lodging, being as sad and melancholy, as I was poor and miserable: saying to Sayavedra, what dost thou think of the good market that we have made in this Fair. He told me, Sir, I see how things are carried, for I have been an eye-witnesse of all that hath past; but what remedy is there against the force and power of the potent: was it to be imagined, or once to be suspected by us, that such a business as this, so fair, and so full of truth, should prove so quite opposite to our understanding.

*Guzman comes be-  
vy and me-  
lancholy  
out of pri-  
son.*

Whilest

Whilest we were thus talking on this matter, there comes me a couple of guests that were strangers into the Inne, challenged by a young man of that Citie, to play at Cards. And in a little square room, that divided their chamber from mine, they had set up a table, and to play they go. Now I walking up and down that way, in my passing to and fro, seeing what past among them, I was desirous (for to entertain the time, and to drive away melancholy) to draw nearer unto them, and to look upon them. I did so, and pulling a stool unto me, taking that which came first to hand, I sat me down, viewing one of their hands for the space of some two houres, or more, in all which time there was little or nothing lost on either part. The money went to and fro; losing one while and getting another; fortune had show'd her self so equal, that she had made them in a manner all saviors; Continuing their play, within a little while after, the Sea began to swell, the waves grew high, and the money began to swim from one side of the board to the other; their blood waxed hot, and their choler began to kindle, they were now at their close fight, watching their advantages to board, or sink each other, they grappled hard for it on all sides, and the Cards likewise they plaid their parts, and laid about them for life, bestirring themselves lustily, and gave one of them such a blow on the head with his club, that he was stricken over board, and he and all his money sunk, having lost in that fight above a hundred Crownes. And this man, that had that great blow given him, was he in whose hand I lookt. Of whose loss I was as sensible, as if the case had been mine own; thinking with my self, that I had brought him this ill luck

luck, and that I was the instrument of this his bad fortune. Which did grieve me so much the more, for that I understood, that he was not worth in all the world so much more, as he had then lost.

Gaming ought to be used for two ends; either for meer gain, or to entertain the time. If for gain, I say nothing unto it, save *Capiat qui capere potest*: catch, he that can catch; Let every one arm his own ship as well as he can, and have an eye to the bullets that flie about his ears.

They that play for entertainment, should be only such, whom the Cards themselves do mark and point out unto us: In them consider the *Kings*, the *Queens*, and the *Knaves*; giving us thereby to understand, that none should play thereat but *Kings*, *Queens*, and *Knaves*. I can assure you, that in all the whole pack of Cards, you meet not with any Merchant, Trades-men, Lawyers, nor Divines, for they are not besetting their professions.

*The Coat-cards are called in Spaine, Rey, Cavallo, y Sota. The first is the King, as with us; The second signifies a Knight, which is all one with our Queen; And the third a Souldier; which is the same with our Knave.*

This my man, was one of the guests to the house where I lay; the quarrel ceased for that time, and a fresh challenge was made against after supper. And so they brake off, the winners going each their way, as their several occasions lay; and the loser, to look out more money; but he could not (it should seem) get any money, yet he came thither, though without it, more offended with those that would not lend it him, than with those who had got it from him. He went walking and raging up and down the room, puffing and blowing like a Bull. One while he walks athwart it, another, stalks along from one end to the other, then again flings me from one corner to the other corner, huffing and chafing, nothing could content him, all

was

was vexation of spirit, he ralles upon the City, and upon that traytor that was the cause of his coming thither, that that was no Countrey for honest men to dwell in, but for theeves and cut-throats, being that he had in that Town, an hundred known friends, and all of them rich and well moneyed men, yet could he not borrow one Royal of them all, and began to swear that he would do this, and that, and I know not what, if it should be his hap to meet with any of them in his own Countrey. I gave him the hearing, and held my peace.

I called *Sayavedra* aside, and told him what occasion was offered? Tell me thy opinion? Shall it not be well done, that after supper, when the same company shall meet again together, wanting a third to maintain the combate, I should come forth as a challenger into the list, adventuring to run my Lance amongst the rest, putting my self upon fortune, either to lose or win the honour of the day, by hazarding those few crownes that I have? *Sayavedra* said, That he had set up his rest to do me service. We were then driven very low, and almost brought to beggers bush; Wherefore he would marshal things in that manner, that both safely, and subtilly, he would all over the field, and evermore give me advice of my adversaries forces, and how and where their strength lay, and when I was to charge them home, as likewise to make my retreat; having said thus, I was for very joy, ready to leap out of it my self; for my ability at play, and the skill and cunning that I had in handling the Cards, being holpen by his advice, there was no doubt to be made, but that I might easily convert three parts of their money to mine  
own,

own, I did desire this base action should proceed rather out of his mouth, than mine. For otherwise, if this trick should have been plaid out of mine hand, *Sayavedra* would haply have said to himself, See, what a fine Master I serve! I have rid my self of a thief, and have lighted upon a cheater. He and I were disputing a great while with our selves, which signes would be best, whereby we might come to know both the others hands; And at last it was resolved on, that the best manner of doing it, would be by the buttons of his jerkin, or the joynts of the fingers, according to the art of the *Gammuth*, when we learn first to sing: And having made trial thereof some three or four bouts, we grew so ready and so perfect therein, that we now understood one another better by these our tokens, than our tongues.

Now were the challengers entered the lists, whilst I was walking up and down there in the room. They began to talk of falling a fresh to play; whereupon, the third man told them what had passed, and that he could not meet with those his friends that should have furnished him with money, but if they would trust him upon his word, till the next day morning, see, whatsoever he should lose unto them upon the ticker, he would truly pay them. The Citizen said, there was no heart in it, and that it was a kinde of dull and tedious sport, and that he had never any good luck; but did alwayes lose, when he plaid upon the Ticker. And the other would by no means give way thereunto. Whereupon the company was a breaking off, I stept forth and said unto them; Since this Gentleman doth not play, so as you will not play to great play, if it please you, I will put my self



upon the Cards, and trie for a while how well they will deal with me. The other two, were very glad of this, the motion pleas'd them passing well; for they took me to be some young Thrush. Making reckoning, that all was their own, if they got me into play. And for that they hought, if I should chance to lose my money, I would also venture my chaine (which I of purpose discovered unto them by unbuttoning my jerkin,) and that I would not have the patience to give over, but throw the pot-hooks after the pot, and the helve after the hatchet.

I called *Sayavedra*, and said unto him; Go fetch me some money, if you have any silver left, bring it me quickly. He presently drew out an hundred Royals, which I had given him before, that he might have them in readinesse, when I called for them. He abiding a while in my chamber, till our play grew a little warme, and then calling him to snuff the candles, I said unto him, seeming as if I had been angry with him; Are we to be used thus by thee? Have you so much business to do in the chamber, or are you so drowsie-headed, that you cannot stay here in the room, if we should at any time have occasion to use you? He said never a word, but stood still, and held his peace, in so much that no man in the world would have once suspected any harme from him, for he never offered so much as to cast an eye upon me, nor did he at any time remove his hand from his bosome, by which meanes he gave me true knowledge how their games went. And howbeit, we understood one another well enough. I would sometimes of purpose seem not to understand him, nor would I make use of his wary advice, but when I had won

two

two or three hands, *I* took pleasure now and then to lose a little. *I* did suffer them now and then to draw my money; but neither much, nor often, lest when they had me on the list, they might have left off: *I* was content they should touch it, but not enter upon it; and afterwards *I* would charge them home, that *I* might, having once netted them, egge them on the more. *I* did skirmish with them in that cunning manner, that *I* made them still come on more and more eager upon my money. But when *I* began to suspect, that they would give over the fight, and sound a retreat, and that they were to leave the field, and be gone, *I* then thought fit to pursue them to some purpose, and to follow the chase a little more hotly, till *I* saw them safe in the net, and had them in mine hands, to do what *I* would with them, and then did *I* set roundly upon them and their money, bringing it all under my subjection in a very short space, few blows being stricken in the battle. *I* had got of those two, all that they had gained of the other before. Whereof they were so ashamed, and so stung withall, that they swore they would have another bout with me the next day, challenging me again at the same game. *I* willingly accepted of it. They came, we play'd, and *I* was willing to let them win some thirtie Crowns of me, which they carried away with them, giving over play for that time; for, this losse, was but a bait that *I* layd for them, knowing that this would flesh them, and put them in heart a-new, and make them come on bravely at the next meeting. Yet one of them was willing to continue longer, and said; Let us play greater game, for that the night grows late. Nay (quoth *I*) by the same reason, it were better that we go

now to bed, and meet again to morrow, which if you like of it, and be at leasure, we may come together somewhat sooner, and taking the day before us, we may play at pleasure, and as long as we list. They were wondrous glad to hear me say so, and that they had yet lost somewhat unto me, hoping in the end that they should get more by me.

The next day they came, with their purses well armed with double Pistolets, well appointed for warr, they threw down whole handtulls of them upon the boord, some being peeces of two, some of four, and some of ten. Saying, as they flung them down; *Coraggio, coraggio, (Sennor Soldado)* see you what here is, to be spent in your service. We began to play; and I went wearying of them out by little and little, giving them line enough to run themselves out of breath, and when I saw, that I had now brought them even with me, and that I might strike them both dead at once, I let fly a whole volly of shot at them, and in a few hours, I saw in these hands of mine above five hundred Crowns, which yeilded themselves up to my mercy, whom (cut of the pitifulnesse of my nature) I took into my protection. The main battell being thus overthrown, my two Captains were faine to forsake the field, and to trie if they could levie fresh men, and raise new forces to encounter me again the next day, promising to bid me battell if I durst abide it. I was not a little glad to hear them say so, as well for that I had let them blood both alike; as also, for that my heart was now pretty well and quiet; holding my self very well pleas'd with that he had gotten of them, being as well contented, as if I had won all that they had been

been worth. For I had enough to serve my turn, and what should I desire more? But fearing, that this Towns-man, might put a Town-trick upon me, and that the stranger being in need, and in want might do me some wrong (for I was lately, to my great cost, too well acquainted what good justice a man was to look for in that Citie) I told *Sayavedra*, when we were alone by our selves, that without any word speaking, or telling any body, whether we intended to go, we would take horse betimes in the morning, and post with all speed to *Millain*. And so we did.

## CHAP. III.

*Guzman travelling towards Millain, Sayavedra upon the way, recounts, his own Life unto him*

WE rode towards *Millain*, I called to *Sayavedra*, and said unto him; Come, let us talk of some thing or other, to passe avway the time; or do thou tell me some story upon the vway, to give me content; it vwill make our journey the shorter. He said.

I vvish Sir, that I could tell you a tale, howv glad I vvvas, and vvhat a deal of good it did do me, to tast of the svweetest of your gain. But I am so confident of the noblenesse of your disposition, and this my coming to seve you shall not be only for satisfaction of the debt, vvherein I stand bound unto you, but also make much for my profit; Whereupon I thus replied.

Friend *Sayuedra* What is past, is past; and there is no more to be said of it; for there is no man, that doth not slip in one kind or other. We live all in the flesh; and all flesh is weak. And let him be vvho, or vvhat he vvill, (had he found himself in that great vvant and misery; as vve vvete) he vvould have done the like, as vve have done: vvhich vvvas no better than plain theft, to coozen these poor men, of that little they had.

And for that *I* perceive thou hast understanding and iudgment to apprehend any thing, *I* persvvade my self sthou doest likewise comprehend, that *I* am no Trader in the *Indies*, but a poor young man, (as thou art) robbed of his substance, and deprived of his necessities, *I* must endeavour therefore to maintain my self, in some reasonable fashon. For albeit *I* served that Lord of mine, the French Embassadour, and lived in house vvith him, it vvvas cut of that love, vvhich he bore unto me from a child, and upon the earnest intreatie, that he made to my friends; my father, and he, being of ancient acquaintance. And so he begg'd me of him, saying; he should take no more care of me, and that he vvould one day make me a man.

Every man  
would fain  
live.

But since that things have so fallen out with me, (as in part you your self know) *I* am not minded to return thither any more, till *I* have seen somewhat of the world, and that *I* may come home rich and in plenty, and be able to live in ease and pleasure, all the rest of my life, every one seeks to advance himself and his fortunes, as high as he can. The King, seeks to augment his State, and enlarge his Kingdome: The Gentleman, to raise his House: The Merchant to encrease his wealth; and the Trades-man, to gain his Trade. And since

thou

thou say'st, that thou lov'st my company, and tak'st much contentment therein, and that thou lik'st so well of it, I hope, it shall neither be hurtful unto thee, nor hard to brook it, I know how to value and make a true esteem of those kindeneses which are done unto me; the thankful acknowledgment thereof, I shall refer to my actions, which in their due time, shall testifie, what I now profess, but because reward is the spur, which puts vertue forward; and the onely whetstone, that sets an edge on mens affections; making them to go on bravely and couragiously in all that they undertake; it is fit, and no more than what is just, that every man should have a proportionable and equal gain, according to the quality of his adventure: And I am very well content that Guzman all that which shall fall, or come unto our <sup>purposes to</sup> hands, as well those fruits already fallen, as those <sup>to provide</sup> that are to fall hereafter, shall be divided into three <sup>for a deer</sup> equal parts; of all which thou shalt have one part <sup>year, and</sup> for thee, and another for me, and the third shall <sup>showes how</sup> go for to defray the charges of *avergie*, for it <sup>it may be</sup> will <sup>done.</sup> not be alwaies faire vweather; nor shall we still faile before the vvinde; nor make evermore a speedy voyage; as it happens vwhen men are becalmed at Sea; and vwhen we shall land and come ashore, it is not fit that we should vwant cloaths, and other necessities, nor must we, if the enemy should set upon us, be unprovided of munition to defend our selves, and offend him; nor, should we chance by some storme or other accident, to be cast upon some shelve or quicksand, must we lack a boat to put out, vwherein to save our lives, though we lose our goods. This third part, we will still lay apart by it self, that shall be, as it were the

*Ararium*, and publick Treasury, our common purse, for to supply and relieve our necessities. For if vve go wisely and discretely to vwork, and be not rash and inconsiderate in our actions, seeing vve want not understanding, and have some skill in Navigation, I for my part will content my self with no les, than some good place of command in my Country, and such good store of wealth, that I may afterwards live happily all the daies of my life. And all this will I bring about, before I be six years elder. Be therefore of good courage, and take heart unto thee, for thou shalt make the like purchase, wherewith thou maist return with credit to *Valencia*. I would not have thee busie thy self with base thefts, nor be one of those speaking thieves, that steal Primers, Horn books and Ballads, or Print other mens coppies, for from such kinde of thefts, thou shalt reap no other profit, but infamie, and reproach. In a word, let us bravely resolve, *Morir. ahorcados, o comer con trompetas*; either to hang together for company, or to have our dinner served in with Trumpets. Let us die like dogs, or live like men. For a mans life is ended in a day; but poverty is a daily death. And if we go on as we have begun, and use these and the like tricks, we shall with a little practice, grow to greater both cunning, and wealth, and bid a fart in Fears teeth; For all moneths are alike, be they fair or foule, every one hath his thirty daies, and no more; every one must be content with his fortune; And for as much, as in the dark, all *Cats* are black, and *Joan* is as faire as my Lady; we will so carry things in the clouds, that we may not appear in our right colours. We two will joyne together, keep counsell, and deal fairly one with another

other,  
be n  
will  
shale  
third  
and h  
with  
may  
fortu  
light  
W  
carri  
he m  
me.  
for  
ter  
wor  
less  
in o  
hap  
rob  
foi  
my  
you  
tho  
als  
enc  
no  
pa  
un  
bo  
br  
re  
se  
C

other, dividing the spoile equally, that there may be no falling out between us: For, one Wolfe, will not bite another. Lo here, if thou wilt, thou shalt presently, before we go any further, have a third part of what is already got; for it is not just and honest, to debar any man of his right, or to with-hold that from him, which is his. Much good may it do thee; and thank God, that with so fortunate a foot, and so propitious a star, thou hast lighted thus happily into our company.

With this kinde of language, and my liberal carriage, I went securing his person unto me, that he might not forsake me, but stay, and live with me. For if I should have sought over all the world for a Marriner, I could not have met with a better Mate for my Barke. He, upon these good words of mine, was so overcome, that he rested no less contented, than conquerd by me. And so falling in our future discourse, from one thing to another, I hapt at last to ask him the cause, that mov'd him to rob me? Sir, said he, though I would yet I can't now forbear, to acquaint you with the whole course of my life, and truly and faithfully to deliver unto you every particular passage thereof, as well for those favours which I have so liberally received already from your hand, as also for that it is well enough known to the world, and therefore requires no such secrecie, that I am of *Valencia*, born of honest parents, (whom report may one day make known unto you) for they (God be praised) are now both dead; only their fame liveth. We were two brothers, and both unfortunate, for laying aside all respects of honour, and to apply our selves to any set course of life, more out of a desire to see strange Countreys, than to get some honest means, where-  
by

Sayavedra  
discourses  
to Guz-  
man of his  
course of  
life.



by to live, we went out into the wide world to seek our fortunes. But because things might not chauce to fall out so luckily with us, as we did frame to our selves, and that if we should come in trouble, we might not be known, nor dishonor our House, we did agree between our selves, to change and alter our names.

My brother call'd himself *Mateo Luxan*. In this manner, did he wander thorow the world; and the world saith, that it gave him the same payment, as it did me. I knowing that the *Sayavedra's* were of principal note, and ancient Gentlemen of *Sevil*, I filed my self to be of that City, and took their name upon me. But I was never in *Sevil*, nor knew any more thereof, than what I have said already.

Being thus new christned, we set forth on one, and the same day, and began our travels together, but went each of us a severall way. Some have told me, who knew him by sight, that they have seen him in *Castile*, and in *Andaluzia* very hardly used: and that from thence, he went to the *Indies*, where it also went ill with him. I shaped my course another way; for I got me to *Barcelona*, where in the Gallies I past over into *Italy*: I had spent all that, which I had brought along with me from home, and at last became exceeding poor. And because necessity doth often-times, drive a man to do that, which he never dream't of, I chanced in the end to arrive in the Kingdome of *Naples*.

I travell'd all over that Kingdome, spending that which I had not, till I came to be a notable *Picaro*, and began at length to converse with as arrant Rogues as my self; and from one round to

another I grew up by degrees, to be a fine nimble finger'd Fuller, I could teazell cloaths singular well, I could pick a pocket very nealy, and cut a purse handsomely, and do many the like fine feats. I made my self a *Camerade* with those that were the Masters of our Company, and had recourse alwayes unto them, that they might cover me under their wings in time of adversitie; I was but their servant, and one of those ordinary Souldiers as it were, that fought under their Ensigne. For my poverty was so great, that I could never get me a flock to put me into cloaths, or to be able to set up shop for my self; there was not such a cunning sharker amongst them all, as I was; my sheers would find an edge, when theirs would not cut; they were all bunglers to me; I was able to have read unto them all those Lectures of thieving, cony-catching and cheating, which I read for my degree, when I proceeded Batcheler in that Art. None of them understood half so well as I, the Art in cutting of a purse; nor to dive into a pocket, so deep, as I could. I was an old dog at it, and could dispatch my businesse in a trice. Mine eye, and mine hand, went both together; they were here and there, and every where, with a *presto* be gone, I was of all occupations; a Marriner, a Miller, a Baker, a Scout, a Crosse-biter, one of your up-right men, a Cheater, a Coozener, a Fox, that was full of craft and subtiltie.

But by reason of their ancient standing, and the reputation they had got in those former dunsficall times, they tyrannized and usurped on the name of famous professours: These were the *Casars*; and we the poor rogues; whom they sent abroad, from house to house, to scowre dishes, to cast an eye

*The Life of Guzman*

eye in every corner, to make one excuse or other wheresoever we came; demanding in one place, whether such a Gentleman were there or noe: and in another, whether they wanted a young youth, that was willing to serve them. Asking such a Gentlewoman, whether she would buy a pair of Twizes: which but a little before, we had cut from another Gentlewomans girdle, and having new ground and whet them, and made them very neat and clean, and fitted them with a new case, and a new ribond, we sold them afterwards avay for new ware. Sometimes, we would make shew to go into some house to make vvarer, and if we found, that there was a stable there, or other by roomes belonging to it, in thither would we go, where we should meet with a horse cloth, a curry-combe, a sieve, or the horse mans cloak, we should evermore be sure of bridles, and collars, and stirrops, and the like kind of tackling for their Mules and their Hackneys, and if by misfortune, any one should come in, and see us there, loosing presently our cod-pisse point, we would squat us down in a corner in the stable, as if we had been driven in thither by necessity to do that service, which no body can do for us but our selves. And in case they should say unto us (as now and then they would) you rogue, you thief, what make you here? We would then presently rise up, and pulling up our breeches to make them fast, and be gone, we would while we were a trussing, mildly make answer; I pray Sir be not offended; take heed to whom, and of what you speake; for here is no such kind of man, as you talk of, no thief, no rogue, but one that is true and honest, and meanes you no harm: I was over-taken in the street

street, and forced to come in upon meer necessitie,  
and therefore I hope you will hold me excused

I was a pretty little wagg, slender of growth,  
rather lean than otherwise, very wittie, full of in-  
vention, and above all, as nimble, and light-  
footed as a Buck. I always laid wait in the day-  
time, how and where I should compasse my ex-  
ploys in the night. In the day time we did (like  
good Christians) visit Churches, go to Masse, hear  
Sermons, frequent your Indulgencies, Jubilees,  
Feasts, and Processions. We were present at your  
play-houses, and Courts of Justice, at all Execu-  
tions, and all other publick meetings and assem-  
blies, where there was any concourse of people,  
any pressing or thronging in the streets, striving to  
be alwayes in the thickest of the croud, entring in  
and out amongst them, passing to and fro a thou-  
sand times. One while we brought away daggers,  
stoln from mens backs; other-while hand-kerchers  
pickt out of their pockets; purses, *rosarios*, *twizes*,  
jewels worne by women; and such odde toys as  
your children wear about their necks. And when  
all failed, and that I could not make all that pur-  
chase as I would, with my sheers (which I had  
ever ready in my hand) look where the best and  
fairest cloak was in all the company: I did whip  
from behind, or the one side of it (if by chance  
it slipt of from his shoulders in the throng) as much  
as would make three or four pair of soles, or some  
such odde knack, or other.

We would cunningly steal to your silk, or cloth  
of gold-hangings; and from the lower part of those  
hangings, would we snip of a peece or two, ac-  
cording as occasion, or time, would give us leave:  
and in the turning of an hand, we made thereof  
either

either womens bodies, mens *monteras*, purses, pin-pillows, sleeves for little children, and a thousand the like fiddling things.

And for your great Fairs and Markets, we will not stick, for a need, to come an hundred miles off, that we may be present at them. Our expence upon the way, was alwayes very little; for we still made our provision, as we went along, and what we got in one place, that we spent in another, taking up hens here, capons there, in such a Village chickens, and such a Dove-house pigeons, pigg, gammons of Bacon, and any thing that was tame, and would come to hand; Which that we might do with the more conveniencie, and lesser hazard of our persons, we would begin to beg an alms, saying: That we were poor Students, and being driven to great necessity, could not for want of means return handsomely into our own Countrey, Which we did not so much demand of them, to the end they should give us any thing, as thereby to seek occasion to steal something from them, having an eye still towards the hen-roost.

Besides, for your Inns, and your Farmers back-fides, I carried alwayes with me a good angle-rod with a strong hook and line, baited with a crust of bread, or some six grains of wheat, to catch therewith whatsoever come in my way. and I seldom put in my rod, but I pluckt out a fish as long as mine arme. But came the worst, that could come, we should be sure to meet with as good and fat a Calf, as any man need to eat, the world could not afford better Veal. As soon as we came to *Naples*, at our first coming wee drave for some few dayes, a very good trade. I had put my self into such apparell that my presence might promise  
the

the reputation of an honest man.

One of my Camerades was of that Countrey, servant to a regent of that Collaterall Counsell, he was desirous to make himself known unto him, whereupon he went to kisse his hands, nor did his own return empty from him; But (being very glad to see him) offered to do him any kindnesse that lay in his power. And presently, without any more ado, he employ'd him in some businesse, and those of some worth and moment, and well deserving a worthier subject.

I went one day and cast mine eye upon a very fair house, which at the first sight seemed unto me, to belong to some honourable person, or principall Gentleman of that Citie. I entred as boldly into it, as if the house had been mine own.

I lookt about on this side, and on that side. At last it was my fortune to spy lying on the top of a little side-table, a fair black velvet Kirtle, richly embroydered, which would very well serve to make three severall sorts of garments, cassock, and hose, and something else besides; for there were full fifteen yards in it, and might very well besem the wearing of the neatest and bravest Gallants in the Kingdom. I took it up, and clapping it under mine arme, fetching two or three nimble friscals, my feet were presently upon the threshold of the door, making their way to go forth into the streer. But I was no sooner come thither, but there I met full butt with the owner of the house, who was Master *Datario*, a man of great place and authority in the City, who seeing me come forth with this fardle under mine arme, asked me what I was, what I made there, and what it was that I carried away with me, but with an untroubled, or rather cheerfull

cheerfull countenance. I said unto him; Sir, it is my mistresses pleasure, that I should untuck these plates a little, to make the fold fall a little handsomer, and that I should lessen it a thought in the waist. for that it fits not well before; and hath given me a charge to dispatch it presently, Do lo I pray (my friend) quoth he, see it be done quickly, and let it be your own hand-working, that it may not be don amiss, & make all the hast you can. I hid me down the street, turning sometimes this way, and sometimes that way, now here, and then there, and all, that they might not find any footing of me, if he should chance to uncouple his hounds, and send them after me to follow me upon the hot sent.

He was no sooner come into the house, but he found it all in an uprore, brauling and calling one to another, give me the Kirtle; give me the Kirtle, where is the Kirtle, what is become of the Kirtle? you took it from my mistresse, (saies one) I laid it here, (sayes another.) I left it here (saies a third.) Then falls the Mistresse of the house a chiding, asking who came in, or out? No body could tell of any; Then (quoth she) it is likely, that some of the house must needs have it, therefore look it me out, and that quickly too, or else you shall soundly pay for it. There was such an out-cry, such exclamations, such a howling, such a bawling, and so hideous a noyse, as if the whole house had been fallen to the ground; in so much, that they could not one understand another.

In this hurly-burly comes me in the master of the house, acknowledging the error, that he had committed, in letting me go away in that fashion. Presently he made search after me, but by this time I had

had both secured my person, and the Kirtle.

That night I got me to the house of a great Constable, out of a desire that I had to finish a peece of work, which some few dayes before, I had drawn out. Many Gentlemen, were there met together to play, who had ordinarily three or four tables set ready for them, and a page, or two appointed to sit up, and attend upon them, till they gave over. Every table had his silk carpet, and two silver candlesticks; I carried thither with me a couple that were counterfeit, made of the purest Tin I could get, and just of the same fashion and proportion, and so like in every respect, that you could not for their finenesse, distinguish them from the other, provided of purpose, for the better affecting of what I intended. I carried likewise two candles along with me, and using close conveyance, that they might not be seen about me, I leaned against one of the corners of the wall, as I had used heretofore, waiting for a fair occasion to bring my project to pass, giving those that were there to understand, that I was a servant to one of those Gentlemen that were at play. Two, were playing at *Zienros*, at one of those tables, they call'd for lights, there was not any body there but one Page, and he so sleepe and so drowse, that having call'd unto him twice, he did neither answer them, nor well mind what they said unto him: I made presently in to them, and having my candles and candlesticks in a redinesse, which were not long a lighting, throwing one end of my cloak over my shoulder, as if I had been one of the servants of the house: I shifted the candlesticks, putting the lights into those that I had brought with me, clapping those other of silver under mine arme: and lo



turning nimble away from them, walking as Cats do, softly and without any noyse, I got me quietly to my lodging, where I mixt them together with other peeces of Plate, which I had in the like manner at divers times gathered together; And for to take away all occasion of quarrelling and wrangling, and that I might not be askt; How came you by it? Where did you buy it? What was he that sold it you? To avoyd these cavills; I melted it all into one Masse, and putting it into a fine earthen pot, I carried it to my Captain, that he, out of the authority and credit that he had abroad, might the better sell it for me.

He did so; and taking out a fifth part for himself, he gave me the rest in very good Royals of plate. It was an order amongst us, that to him, as to our Chieftain, we should bring all whatsoever we got, whereof the fifth part was his fee, which we truly and justly paid unto him, as a tribute that was as due to him, as that of the *Indies*, is to his *Catholick Majestie*. No Prince in the world had more punctuall payment. And for this tax, tallage, impost, or custome, (or whatsoever in that kind you shall be pleased to call it) we were in all our dangers, protected and defended by him.

We, and this our Commander kept very good quarter, And if at any time, he having need of money, did intreat us that we would lend him some, and put it to account to be paid out of his fifth part, as prizes came in; when we had furnished him, he would presently set it down in his book, with an *Item*, so much due unto such a one, to be paid out of my next Vales, and paid it honestly. No, no, he was none of these shuffling companions, he was wonderfull honest in sharing  
the

the spoyle with us, levelling all accounts, and still keeping an even reckoning with us. My fellows did not loyter but bestirred themselves lustily.

We were four of us; three adventurers, and one Captain to fight in our defence. We would sometimes take him along with us, to the end that if any one of us should be taken napping, and the theft found about us, he might serve to mitigate the matter, when we were thus taken in the manner, making us to restore that which we had taken, giving us two or three boxes on the ear, and as many kicks on the breech, dismissing us from thence in a Devils name, saying withall; Get you gone you rogue, bee packing I say like an arrant rascall and fals thief as thou art, sirrah, let me see your back, and I advise you let me never heare or see that you fall any more a fisching, leave your stealing, and live honestly, else I swear unto thee by the faith of an honest man. I will cause thee to be whipt, or send thee to the Gallies. Being thus curiously used by him, first kickt and beaten, and afterwards roundly rated, they that were present, taking him to be a good honest Gentleman, and a mercifull minded man, they were content to let us go, and so did we scape that storm by his means.

But some again, were so full of rage and choller, that nothing could pacifie their wrath, but our imprisonment, whipping, hanging all was too little for us. To such, our Captain would come, and tell them; Do not foul your hands with such a filthy rogue as this is, give him a hundred kicks, and let him go like a villain and thief as he is, you see he is a poor rascall, and if you commit him to prison, there will he starve, and be eaten up with lice; and what pleasure can you take in the de-

struction of such a ragged snake, who in himself is so wretched a soul already? And with that, crying out; Thou ungracious unluckie villain, they would give us such jobs, such pushes, such shocks, and jusslings, and thrust us with that violence from them, that they would make us to root up the earth with our noses.

But if any one should be so stiffe, and so hard-laced, that nothing could move him to pittie, nothing work our enlargment, we used our best endeavour to get from them; if that would not serve the turn, we would stand upon our justification, and not stick (and that stoutly too) to tell this or that other, to his teeth that he lyde in his throat, and that we were as honest men as he, or the best of them all: and whilst we were thus striving to be gone, our Captain would interpose himself under colour of pacifying the matter, and would help to part us, by his comming in between us, and so free us from their clutches, and set us at liberty. And if need were, (when all this would not serve the turn) he did throw a bone amongst them, and would seek some occasion or other, provoking them by words to fall to blows, quieting the lesser tumult by the greater, and so made a shift to scuffle away.

At other times, when we were running away with that which we had stoln, and were hardly followed, even close at the heels of us, one of our fellows would come athwart him that pursued us, and stepping out just before him, would detain him for a while, asking him what was the matter, and what troubled him, that he made such hast, who it was that had done him wrong, together with the nature of the injurie, and so would not suffer him to pass on, as if he had desired to make peace, and

to pacifie both parties, the least delay made to our great advantage; and they that flie, have alwaies the start of them that follow, and fear, in such cases, doth evermore clap wings to our feet, they would bee bound for our forth comming. So that by Hook, or by Crook, we went through-stitch with our businesse, *maugre* all the world; for we had still one trick or other, when it came to a dead lift, wherewithall to serve our turn.

But my sins had drawn me one day forth of the Citie, to walk abroad and take the ayre, and coming neer unto a river side, where in a meadow upon the grasse were layd out a great many linnen cloathes a drying, and the woman that lookt unto them, sitting close, to shade her self from the heat of the Sun, in a little hollow cleft of an old wall, that was not farr off; me thought the linnen needed no more drying, and whether it did or no, it was all one to me, wet or dry, either way would serve my turn well enough. I had a moneths mind to fold up two or three of the finest and newest shirts, that were there; and so very easily and fairly I took them up. The good woman did not see what I did for her back was all this while towards me; but there was not one wanting, who advised her thereof.

This poor woman, sets me out a throat, whose shrill sound did ascend as high as heaven. And leaving a little girle, to look unto the rest of the linnen, she began to run after me. I walked soberly and demurely along; letting (as I went along) my ware fall to the ground, going on still as I did before, without enlarging of my steps thinking with my self, that when this wicked woman had recovered that which she lost, she would therewith have

been contented, and rested quiet : she but cryde out before, now she made such a noyse, and sent forth such a loud clamour, that the whole field did ring of the peal, which that shrill clapper of hers made, the out-cries that she made were heard by many; insomuch that great store of all sorts of people came running in especially boys & little children, besides great number of dogs, barking and bawling. Some young lads, which fell in with these lesser beagles, to make me cry the fuller, were ready to swallow me up alive, from whose power it was impossible for me to escape. From that day forward, I began to stand in fear of this little fry, which heretofore I was never afraid of.

*A short  
tale of a  
Drunkard.*

When I heard *Sayavedra* say so, there presently came into my mind a famous drunkard in *Madrid*, who being kickt, and spurn'd, and mightily abused by the boys that had got about him; when he came to the end of the street, he stoops me down and takes up a couple of stones, and holding the one in one hand, and the other in the other, leaning himself against a wall, he said thus unto them : No more, no more (my good boys) it is enough; stay here, stay here (my sweet children for it is not fit you should go any farther. And therefore (my pretty hearts) let me intreat you to go back, and not trouble me, or your selves any longer : for I am very well satisfied with those courtesies I have already received from you for the which I kindly thank you. Otherwise I have nothing to return you in requitall, but these stones, which I shall freely bestow upon you, though it cost me laying on; so that some of you, I believe, will be better paid for your pains then you expect. Whereupon they seeing him thus resolute, they

sneak

sneakt away one by one, and let the poor man alone, who afterward went quietly along about his businesses. If *Sayavedra* had taken the like course, he might peradventure have had the like successe.

I sent presently to my Captain, advising him how the case stood with me, who as soon as he understood of it, made all the hast he could unto me, was with me ere a man could say *this*; and well instructed me what I should both say and do. That done, he went to the Notarie, telling him that he knew me to be well descended, that I was honourably born both my Father and Mother, and of as ancient a House as any was in *Spain*: and that it was not possible, nor was it to be beleev'd that such a Gentleman as *I* was, would commit so foul a fact.

But say that it should be true; he might either do it out of youthfullnesse or out of want, lacking money, and being loth to begg or borrow, or forced thereunto out of pure hunger; and therefore chose rather to hazard than famish his person. Besides, it is a matter of no moment, a toy, a trifle, a thing not to be made any reckoning of, as well in regard of its small value, as also in respect of the Gentlemans quallitie, and the noblenesse of his house. What with these good words and something else that he did besides, within some two hours after I was freed out of Prison: And even as *I* was putting of my foot over the threshold, who should I meet full butt, but Master *Davario*? who came thither to free a Prisoner.

As soon as he saw me, he presently knew me, and withall pusht me so violently back, that *I* fell flat upon my back to the ground; and then come fiercely upon me that he might hold me, while he

had me at his advantage, and calling to the keeper, committed me anew, and followed the accusation so hard against me, that neither intreaties nor any offers to make him satisfaction for his kirtle, were able to make him surcease his sute. He was a powerfull man, I used all possible diligences: but neither did my pleading that I was a Gentleman, nor the tendernes of my years, prevail so farr, as to bring me fairly off, but they gave me such a heavy sentence that I shall not forget it while I live. I went for shirts, and they flung me of mine from my shoulder to my waist, banishing me from thence for ever. I had my payment, but the block-head had not his Kirtle.

Well, I was forced to forgo *Naples*, and with it, all my old friends and acquaintants: I pickt up all my trinkets together, and that poor pittance that I had pickt up by mine own industry, and departed from thence, wandering up and down *Italy*, till I came to *Bologna*, where *Alessandro* received me into his service: When we were in *Rome*, and came in unto you, when you were in that thrust and throng of people, we did not so much intend your good, as expect that some farther quarrel would have grown thereupon, whereby we might with the more safety have got some Cloaks or Hats, but missing thus of our purpose, we began to plot how we might commit this theft. We were now come to our journeys end. And so ceasing to talk any farther of it we came into the Inne.

## CHAP. IV.

*Sayavedra meets in Milan with a friend of his that serv'd a Merchant; Guzman de Alfarache lays a wistty plot how to rob him.*

WHen we were come to *Milan*, we kept vacation for three or four daies, for I durst not as yet adventure to play. I was loath to have any thing to do with your men of War, for your Soldiers are subtille cunning gaimsters, and above all, bear a most malicious mind against a mans money. They are never quiet, till they have it. Besides, of them I was sure to get but little, but might be in election to lose much. I was not minded to do any thing there, save only to round the Citie, and afterwards to bid it farewell.

Guzman comes to Milan.

Standing one day in the midst of the Market-place, there came to *Sayavedra*, a handsome young youth, honestly clad, and well behav'd, and both in his garbe and fashion, a very fine *Spaniard*. But because his back was towards me, I could not then discern more of him, they went a little aside off from me, where alone by themselves, they entertained talk a good while: which put me in a great muse, thinking, what might be the cause that these two should treat together with that secrecy, not having (as I did imagine with my self) ever seen one another before. I stood still, observing their proceedings, that if they should chance to go towards my lodging, I might (take the start of them) be there before them.

When it was almost dinner time, this young youth took his leave; all this while I was wonderfull



full jealous, and had a strong suspicion, that they had plotted together to put a trick upon me. And *Sayavedra* not saying a word to me, nor I to him, my fear was thereby the more increased, and began more and more to doubt: what their drift might be. Watching him with no less care then a Cat would watch a Mouse, when I had dined, calling *Sayavedra* unto me, I said thus unto him; that young man, that was with you this morning, me thinks I have (if I be not much mistaken) seen him heretofore in *Rome*. Is not his name *Mendoza*?

*Aguileta a  
famous  
thief.*

No Sir, (said *Sayavedra*) his name is *Aguileta*; nor hath he his name for nought: for he is an Eagle that will fly at any thing, nothing comes amiss to him, he is still ready upon all occasions. He is a good fellow, and a fine companion; he is likewise a brother of the Company, and such a one, as none of them all can out-strip him, he hath more tricks than a hundred of them, there is more resort to his Lectures, then to all the Readers beside, put them all together.

He hath a quick apprehension, a nimble wit, a strong brain, a sound judgment, he is an excellent pen-man, and such an Accomptant, either for the keeping of a Merchants book, or summing up of any reckonings whatsoever, that I know not his fellow: We have known one another this many years.

He gave me an account, how he came to this Citie, with a purpose to seek to live, he had by good hap lighted upon an entertainment; for he had placed himself with a Merchant of this Citie, who had received him into his service for the goodness of his hand, and hath serv'd him now a year, and some-  
what

they what more very faithfully and truly.

He farther told me, that we should lay our heads together, and draw one or two good fellows into our company, and joyn together, to knead such a cake, and to make us such a swinging pastie that we might feed our fills, and free our selves from this poor and miserable kind of life, wherein now we live, But I was loath to hearken thereunto, for two respects.

First, because I found my self already so well fitted to my mind, that I did not desire to live any better life, then that I did now with you, And secondly, for that a great deal of consideration is to be required, before a man leap out of one course of life into another. We gave, and took; he argued, I answered: in conclusion, he prest me hard unto it: but I stood off; so that we did not joyn issue, and all that had past between us, was to no purpose. Many designs, many devises were told to and fro between us; but I did not like of any one of his propositions. For when the conclusion does not handsomely follow, the means thereunto are impertinent, and the ground nought.

This did neither secure my suspicion, nor work an absolute unbelief in me. And albeit, the most part of that evening, we talk't of other things; this fear, was never out of my head, but where-soever I went, or whatsoever I did, I was still thinking upon it, whether I were best to believe him, or no; or whether trusting to his honesty, and depending on the profession of his love unto me, he might play the Iack with me, and go brag when he had done, that he had beaten a Master of defence with his own weapon? Did I not deserve to be laugh ar, if I should, suffer him to carry a-  
way

way the bucklers from me in this fashion? But as mine eye was never of from the door so my hand was still upon my distaffe. I was now become another *Argos* in mine own businesse; and another *Ulysses*, to look to his water. plotting with my self, how (if that were true, which he told me) I might help them to come off safely and cleanly with this businesse, in case it might be a matter of some moment and consideration, I said unto him; Me thinks (*Sayavedra*) thou robbest thy self of thy mirth, because thou canst not rob others of their money. This Merchants great wealth doth greatly disquiet thee. Is that which thou musest upon, I know a friend of mine, that would make a third in this business, and a Fellow I tell you, that will not shrink in the wetting, so as it may be a good fat purchase indeed.

What tack, what substance would you have, sayes *Sayavedra*? There is twenty thousand ducats, and a better penny to be had, if we can handsomely light upon it. There is cloath enough (Sir) to cut out, to content us all, if we will our selves. Well (quoth I.) But I prithoe tell me one thing; seeing thou standest thus plodding, is it possible that thou hast not yet settled upon some one invention or other, that may serve the turn?

No in good faith (Sir) not any, replies *Sayavedra*; I cannot hit upon the right joynt; I have now loytered so long, that I am as far to seek, as if I were but newly entred into my A.B.C. Many projects profer themselves unto me, but I pitch upon none, as mistaking all.

When I heard him say so, I thus made answer. Since it is a business of that importance as thou saist, what share shall I have, if I shall rid you

of this  
1015) b  
Sir (both a  
were b  
two a  
good a  
Sai  
come  
sure w  
a wor  
I be l  
He  
and v  
him,  
larly  
tion.  
in w  
whe  
and  
gan  
as I  
S  
ly in  
to u  
er o  
poo  
win  
de  
for  
lov  
de  
ha  
de  
fo

of this care, and bring you (like valiant conquerors) bravely off with the victory.

Sir (said *Sayavedra*) my part and my person are both at your disposal; but as for *Agnilera*, you were best talk with him your self, and when you two are agreed, I make account the business is as good as ended.

Said I go and seek him out, and see if you can come to speak with him; wish him (when his leisure will give him leave) that he and I might talk a word together, and it shall not be long ere he and I be better acquainted.

He did so, sending a ticket secretly unto him; and when we were met, I began to wyre-draw him, and to question him somewhat more particularly, touching his Masters disposition, his condition, and quality, what store of wealth he had, in what commodities it did most consist, how and where it lay; what moneys he had in present cash, and under what keys? When I had done; he began to make his relation unto me, in this manner, as I here deliver unto you.

Sir, I assure my self *Sayavedra* hath sufficiently informed you of me; yet my self shall give you to understand, and I am by my profession a Caulker of ships, and a reasonable good mariner, but as poor, as poor may be. And albeit, that thousands with a great deal less wit, have grown to a great deal of wealth in the world, yet I have seen some others more able, to have come to the gallows, my self being none of those, that have least deserved it. It is a year and somewhat more that I have serv'd a Merchant, and have taken a great deal of pains in his service. And it is about some four months since, that he had made me the keeper

er of his cash, All his books, are in my hands, but his monies, in his own ; nor can I resolve with my self, how I may so handsomely rob him, Where much is to be had, a man will hazard much. Here is store of gold to be had, and he is worthy to wear it, that wins it. When, I received *Sayavedra's* ticket, desiring to speak with me, I thought it was no idle errand, that he went about, but that there were something in the wind, what ever it were. For I have known him a long time; and that it is not his fashion to put forth to Sea, but when he hath some good peize in chase. And I am verily perswaded, that if this matter be wisely handled, and that we find good firm footing in the passage of this ford, and through our own indiscretion, do not wilfully cast away our selves, we may bring this business bravely about, and make our selves men for ever.

Touching this wealth, I can truly affirm unto you, (as one that knows and hath often seen it) that those commodities, which he hath now in cellerage, and other ware-houses, within his own doors, amount to more then twenty thousand ducats. Wherefore, oftentimes he delivers me the keys, out of the great trust and confidence, that he hath of mine honestie. Besides; he knows those bales are too bigg for me to carry away, on my back. That which he hath cofferred up in two iron chests, in severall sorts of coyn, come to some fifteen thousand ducats, and better. And in his *Escritorio*, that he hath in his shop, some twelve dayes since, did he shut up a delicate dapple gray Car, as Gentle, and tame as my self, cramb'd full with Crowns, three thousand Crowns, in good dainty brave ruddocks, all good double pistoles,

some

some p  
tinge  
so bad  
of the  
sewer  
that w  
dy.

He  
where  
hand  
the Ca  
relatio  
thither  
it. I  
ter of  
He tol  
he had  
those  
dize,  
which  
a mo  
and j  
his e  
was  
must  
the p

V  
shou  
sweet  
sand  
reck  
all  
it o  
do  
thre

some peeces of two, and some of four, not one finger one of them all. Not a man in Town hath so bad a name, so ill belov'd, he is counted one of the Caterpillars of the Common-wealth, whatsoever loss should light upon him, not one man that would be sorry for it, but would laugh heartily.

He acquainted me likewise with his name, where he dwelt, in what place, and on which hand the cabinet stood, as also the box, wherein the Car lay. He made me so good and perfect a relation of every particular, that I could have gone thither blind-fold, and have clapt my hand upon it. I aske him, whether there would be any matter of difficulty in procuring the print of his keys. He told me, that might easily be done; for that he had them all tyed to one little chain, as well those that belong'd to the magazine of his merchandize, as those that serv'd to open his iron chests, which I ordinarily brought unto him. But being a most covetous miserable wretch, his suspicion and jealousy was such, that he would be sure that his eye should never be off from them, so loath was he to loose their sight; That then, which we must first of all begin with, must be the getting of the print of the keys in waxe.

Well, this theft being resolved upon, say wee should come to finger this fine pretty puffle, this sweet cat, with a delicate pudding of three thousand crowns in her belly, and so proportionably reckoning alike in the rest, be it more, or lesse, all of us running equally hazard, in all reason, it ought to be, that as the danger was equall, so the gain should be equal. And so we being three of us, every one ought to have a third part.

But

But in case we shall wade drie foot through this ford, every one of us comming off with a good reputation both of his life and fame, in Credit uncrackt, so good an Architect, or Surveyor of the work, shall very well deserve some reasonable allowance over and above his fellow-Labourers, onely for his cunning contrivance of the building: And if I enter upon this business, and be the onely Projector to bring it handsomly about, I will have one entire third part wholly to my self, the other two thirds that remain, shall be quietly divided into three parts, whereof you shall have one; *Sayavedra*, another; and my self the third.

This was controverted to and fro, and much ado there was about it. But we quickly agreed on the matter. Well, I had the print of them delivered unto me in wax, and caused the keys to be made out of hand; and *Aguilera* instructed us in the mean while, which were which; to the end that we being thoroughly informed, which were for the shop, which for the cabinet, we might know the better how to use them. I afterwards told *Aguilera*, that I would come the next morning, and speak with his Master, and that he should diligently observe all that I did either say, or do, and that every night we should see one another, and lay our heads together.

On the morrow I went to this Merchants shop, and in the presence of his Servant *Aguilera*, I said unto him: Sir, I am a Gentleman; that am but lately come to this Town, with a purpose to buy some rarities and curiosities, as well for mine own use, as to gratifie my friends: and have for that end brought with me a matter of three thousand Ducats, which are now at my Lodging: I have

no Friends, and Money, you know, is a dangerous Commodity; and an Inne I esteem no secure place for so great a sum. And although they have given me a Key to my Chamber, yet am I afraid lest some inconvenience might happen unto me. I have been informed of your good disposition, and honest dealing with all men, and therefore entreat you to do me the favour to keep them for me some few dayes, till I have bought such things as shall be necessary for my Nuptials, I being shortly to be married.

The Merchant was much pleased with my Proposal, and made large proffers of courtesie to me, desiring me to command either himself or his house, as I had occasion; and that he would carefully secure what Moneys I brought to him, and deliver it as often, and in what manner I should demand it of him. Upon these terms we parted. Coming to my Lodging, I sent *Sayavedra* to acquaint our Partner, that about eight dayes hence he should not fail to come to us, and bring with him his Masters *Barrador*, or Book of Remembrance, wherein he sets down what he is to receive and pay.

*Sayavedra* at his return found me very pensive: for I was indeed afraid lest *Aguilera* should be too nimble for me, and make himself Master of the prize. But to clear my brains of such imaginations, I called to my servant; who coming, I thus spake unto him, *Sayavedra*, I have a short Tale worth the hearing, which is this: The Ass (that silly Creature) fell sick, and perceiving death ready to cut the thread of his Mortality, was easily perswaded by his Kinsfolks there pre-

*A short tale  
of an Ass  
that made  
his will.*

H h h.

sent,



sent, to make his Will, each striving for the greatest Portion; inasmuch that his lawfully Begotten, and his Bastard Children quarrelled about it: But their well-meaning Father desirous to depart in peace, (for quietness sake) divided his goods after this manner:

The Asses  
Legacy.

*My Will is, That my Tongue, when I am dead, be bestowed amongst such my Children as are flatterers and back-sliders; To the Cholerick, I bequeath my Tail for a cooler; My Eyes to the Lascivious; My Brains to Alchymists; My Heart to the Covetous; My Ears to the Seditious; My Snout, to Epicures and Drunkards; My Bones to the Slothful; My Loins to the Proud; My Chain to the Obstinate; My Hinder-legs to the Lawyers; My Fore-feet to the Judges; My Head to Scriveners: And lastly, I bequeath my Flesh to the Poor, and my Skin to my Bastard Children.*

I would not that *Aguilera*, bearing us in hand, should at last force us to cover our selves with the Skin of this Testator: which if he should do, I assure you I could not but esteem him a subtil fellow.

*Sayavedra*, to free me from suspicion, answered, I might be satisfied with that laudable Custom which is amongst all *Picaro's*, Never to be false one with another: and, That in a thousand years I should not be deceived of one mite.

True dealing  
amongst  
Thieves.

## CHAP. VI.

Guzman's success in Robbing the Merchant of Milaine; they divide the Moneys, and go to Genoa.

Many various thoughts did in this short time distract these stipendary Pensioners; for I had not given them any account of my design, but onely sweetened their lips, and left them, *Con la miel en la boca: with a taste of honey in their mouths*; longing to see the issue of the business, yet could they not devise in what manner it was to be carried.

Aguilera at the prefixed time brought me his Shop-book. I turned to one of the leaves towards the latter end, where I found some Memorials entred eight days before, and in a void place or blank where nothing was written, I set down in the same Character; Left with me by Don Juan Ossorio, Three thousand Crowns in Gold, some being pieces of ten, but most of two and four. At the same time he left with me Two thousand Royals of Plate.

This done, I drew a Line upon what I had writ, to shew that the book was crost: and wrote in a different letter in the Margent, *Lle- volos, Llevolos; i.e. All this is mine.*

I returned him the Book, together with ten *Doblones* of ten, bidding him, when he opened the Cabinet, to take one hundred Crowns out of the Bag, and put in the *Doblones*. I likewise gave him two Billers; the one said, These three

thousand Crowns belong to *Don Juan Ossorio*; and in the other was written, Here are two thousand Royals in plate, whose true owner is *Don Juan Ossorio*; advising him, That if there were any other Bill or Note in the Bag, to take it out, and leave mine onely there. And that of the two thousand Royals he should put into another great Bag; wherein *Aguilera* told me, There was about seventeen thousand more: and to remember that this great Bag of Silver lay in a Chest next unto his Cabinet, marked with a spot of ink at the mouth of it.

With these instructions, he put every thing in its right place, according to my directions.

The day following, after Dinner, I walked to the Merchants Shop, with my Man at my heels. He rejoiced to see me, thinking I had brought that which I intended to demand of him: To morrow, Sir, (said I) I shall send my servant with a Bag, and a Ticket in it, desiring you to give him a quick dispatch, because I shall have occasion to use his service. The Merchant thinking I meant to have the Money brought him the next morning, he said unto me, Sir, your desire shall be fulfilled, you shall have it when you please.

I went out of doors, and had scarce gone twenty paces, but I returned again, and said to him, Sir, since I went from hence, I have thought upon a business, for which I have present occasion for the use of this Money; and therefore (I pray) let me have it. The Merchant somewhat troubled, said, What Money, Sir, is that you would have of me? All, Sir, said I; for I must presently use it. What All? replied he. All the Gold and Silver, said I. He answered,

What

What Gold and Silver? I told him, All the Gold and Silver, Sir, which you have of mine. I have no Gold or Silver of yours, said he; nor do I know what you mean. Sir, answered I, (roughly) why do you make it so strange? this trick will not serve your turn. Sir, said he, I think you are mad, to demand that of me which you never gave me. I replied, Sir, take heed what you say, and leave off jesting; for I have present use for my Money. Money? said he, What Money do you demand of me? My demand is, those Crowns and Royals I left with you the other day. He answered, Go look your Crowns and Royals elsewhere; the Devil a cross have I of yours. Are you not ashamed, said I, to affirm this before these Gentlemen here present, who are my Witnesses, that when I told you I would send my Man to morrow for them, you answered me, He should have them? and now I come my self, having present occasion for my Money, you deny it. Well may I deny that I never had, said he. Sir, did not I about eight dayes since bring you these Moneys, delivering them unto your self? said I: Give me therefore my Moneys presently, you shall not keep them one minute longer in your hands. Sir, answered he, I have not so much as one Farthing of yours in my hand.

My enflamed choler having set my face on fire, I said, What meanest thou by this? I will constrain thee to produce my Money: be wise therefore in time, and take heed of after-claps. I confess, (replied he) that you promised to leave so much Money with me; but never brought it: nor did I either see or touch, in all

my life, one *Maravede* of your Money; and therefore if you please, complain to the Justice.

When I saw he had armed himself with this resolution, I seemed to foam at the mouth for anger, saying, False man, art thou so wicked thus to rob me of my Money before my face? I advise thee to dispatch, and deliver me my three thousand Crowns, otherwise I will tear them out of thy throat.

Many that pass along the street, entered the Shop, enquiring of the Neighbours the occasion of our quarrel: amongst the rest, comes in a *Bargello*, an Officer of the same nature with our *Alguazil* in *Castile*, a kinde of Sergeant or Catchpole; but he had no *Vare* or white Rod in his hand.

When I saw the Justice present, I supposed my suit almost at an end; I began in a milder temper to speak unto the beholders: Gentlemen, you have heard how this covetous Usurer hath denied me my own Money; let his own Servant speak the truth concerning this business: and if he, out of respect to his Master, shall refuse to deliver what he knows, let his Book be produced, wherein will appear in what parcels I delivered the Money to him, that all the world may judge in which of us there is most truth or honesty. Into a Cat-skin bag that he hath, he put into that *Escritorio* three thousand Crowns of mine, some of two, but most of four: and for confirmation of this, you shall finde amongst them ten Crowns of ten, which make just the sum of three thousand Crowns: and, in a Bag which he hath lock'd up in that iron Chest, he hath put two thousand Royals of mine; saying,

That

That there was at that time in the same Chest about seventeen thousand Royals of his own: and if here in your presence I do not make good what I have said, I will be content to lose it all: onely, Gentlemen, do me the favour (though a stranger) to make present search, that he may not have opportunity to transport or remove them to any other place.

The Merchant then said, I am willing to put my self upon this Tryal: you shall peruse my books, and see all the money in the house. He commanded his Cash-keeper to bring his great book of Accompts. This I excepted against, saying, Perfidious man, why dost thou seek to deceive me with your books? I would see that wherein you set down those particular sums of Money you received of me, which is a long and narrow book. Sir, said *Aguilera*, perhaps this Gentlemen means that in which you write your Memorials; for to my knowledge there is not in all the house, any other of this fashion. This he brought before us, and said, (certainly, Sir) This is the book you would have. I said, This is the Manual that will decide our controverſie, and will make his knavery plainly appear.

They began to turn over the leaves; and when I saw my own hand, I said, Pray Gentlemen be pleased to look upon this writing, and reade these parcels of Money which he hath crost and blotted out; the sums are visible enough, though he hath noted it in the margent to be paid; but this trick shall not avail him, I will have my Money before I will depart.

They did all look upon it, and easily discern the parcels before mentioned.

Whereat the Merchant was mad, swearing a thousand Oathes, that he knew not how it came there, nor who writ it.

The Neighbors that were present, did undoubtedly believe the truth of my Relation; telling me, The crossing of his book was not material, nor his writing in the Margent, that he returned me my Moneys.

You have heard, said I, his protestation, that he received not one peny of mine, and yet you see it here set down; his purpose being, I know, to play the Rogue with me, as is evident by his cancelling the book: if he received it, why doth he deny it? if otherwise, how cometh it here? I beseech you cause that Cabinet to be opened, where I doubt not, but you may finde my *Doblones*, and amongst them, ten of ten Crowns a-piece.

The Merchant refused to open the Cabinet, vowing with fearful obsecrations, That all was villany and lyes; and that he had not in all the house one *Doblone* of ten.

The *Bargello* protested, That if he would not deliver the Keyes, he would give particular notice of all the business to the *Signor Capitan di Giustizia*, who is there in equal authority with a *Corrigidor* in *Castile*.

At last, with great perswasion, the Keyes were delivered, the Cabinet opened; and going to tell the Money, the Billet was discovered, expressing *Don Juan Ossorio* to be their true owner, and the sum found with the ten *Doblones*, three thousand Crowns.

The Merchant swore this was *Opus Dæmonii*, that the Devil had put those *Doblones* there, and not he; and desired them to secure me, because I had a Familiar.

I entreat you, said I, to open the Chest; for there lies my Silver, I saw him put it therein. There were many Bags of greater and lesser sums; but when I saw that with the black spot, I cried out, This is mine: and the truth was confirmed, by finding the other Billet or Note, which specified my two thousand Royals to be there. I was now louder then before, saying, Thou common Cheater, and Enemy to God; I do not wonder if thou be rich, if thou deceivest others as thou hast done me. I committed my Moneys to thy custody, presuming I should have them upon demand; but now I believe he that advised me to thee, was as very a sherk as thy self.

All that were present, were much amazed, and incensed against the Merchant for his false and roguish dealing; being now thoroughly satisfied that I had a great deal of Reason and Justice on my side. This punishment still attends them that live wickedly, That slight proofs are sufficient to overthrow them.

His own Servant swore, That I in his hearing *Aguilera* desired his Master to keep for me three thousand *sworn* Crowns, and two thousand Royals; but knew not whether I delivered them or not: this he referred to his Masters Books, which did not always lie in the shop, but were carried into the Ware-house.

My Servant on the other side swore, That with *Sayavedra* his own hands he told out the Moneys to the *sworn* Merchant, in presence of divers others, that were  
unknown



unknown to him, because he was a stranger in that place.

These evidences were credited; and now they would not suffer him to speak one word in his own defence; nor had he any spirit to talk longer: for being in years, and seeing so strange and unexpected an accident, he seemed almost dead, and continued in a swoon a good space. I comforted my self with this, That if he should die, I should have less want of him, then of his Money.

I was very desirous that the end of this business might be answerable to its good beginning: and therefore when with one unanimous consent they cried out, The Money is his, Give the Gentleman his Money; I answered, I will not receive it, let it be deposited. The *Bargello*, to end the controversy, took the Money into his own Custody; which, with a little Suit, was within a few dayes delivered to me.

My Merchant was not onely cheated of his Cash, but condemned in Costs and Charges of Court, besides the infamy and reproach fell upon him by this means.

When I saw so much Money in these poor and sinful hands of mine, I could not forber laughing at this project which was hatched in my own brain. I was now grown rich, *Sayavedra* relieved, and *Aguilera* had patch'd up his broken Estate.

About two dayes after, he came to us very privately for his share of the Moneys; which I faithfully delivered to him: he told us, His Master was ready to die with grief, and confidently believed the Devil had thus unjustly taken his Moneys from him.

I proffered to *Sayavedra* his part, both of this and the former five hundred Crowns. He said, He knew it secure enough, and desired that his share might still remain in my hands, till he had some opportunity to dispose of them.

Let me not omit one passage which chanced *A tale of a* when my Evidences were examined. A Coun- *Country* trey Coxcomb being brought to witneis in his *fellow.* Landlords behalf; and intrusted, that when he should be ask'd how old he was, he should answer, Eighty: The silly Clown, having a dull understanding, but desirous to pleasure his Landlord; when demanded touching his age, took his Oath, That he was Eight hundred years old. And although the Notary, wondring at his rash Oath, advised him to be careful: He clownishly answer'd, Do thou be careful how thou writest, stand not a sifting other mens lives, but let every man be as old as he will himself. The Court then rising, he was cauled to appear a second time; who still affirmed, he was Eight hundred years old: which the Judge considering, demanded of him, Why he had so sworn? Because, quoth he, (and it like your Lordship) it was for the honour of God, and the *Conde*, my Master.

We continued in *Millaine* some ten or twelve dayes, not altogether free from fear, lest our subtilty should be discovered. Wherefore we did agree to depart from thence to *Genoa*.

In this City I bought one of the fairest counterfeix Gold-Chains that ever I saw, and procured a Gold-Smith to make another of good Gold, so exactly like the other, that it could  
*Guzman*  
*buys a Gold*  
*chain.*
not

not be discerned, but by the weight and tincture; for that of Gold was more ponderous, and gave the greater sound. This cost me six hundred and thirty Crowns; I wish I had given a thousand, being certain to make the false Chain yield me as much. With them, I bought likewise two curious little Boxes of one fashion, and put each Chain in its several Box, not doubting but my project would conduce greatly to my profit.

I told *Sayavedra* in part, how my worshipful Uncle entertained me; and, that being but a child, some of my friends had put a Jest upon me, either because my out-side was not very good; or, that I was not full of Money, that they might gain by me; but now I shall see them in better equipage: and because every *Spaniard* (though the son of a Cocker) adorns himself with the name of *Don*, that he may be esteemed a Gentleman, I will henceforth call my self *Don Juan*

(a) A Garment much like our

Clergy-mens *de Guzman*.

Cassocks here.

Dizesi Sotana porq; se trac foto el mantero

And having furnish'd my self with as much Silk-Grograin, as would make me a Cloke, and a (a) *Sotana*, and all things necessary, we began our Journey for *Genoa*.

## CHAP. VII.

Guzman arrives at Genoa, and is nobly entertained by his Kindred.

WHEN I came to Genoa, I called to minde my former entertainment there, and how I was freed from thence, carrying my Cross upon my shoulders: Whereas now my Friends spread their Clokes upon the ground to receive me. I apparelled my self *A lo Romano*; I attracted the eyes of all men to me, as well because I was a stranger, as likewise that I wore a very brave Sute and *Sotana*, and had a presence not to be despised.

They enquired of my Servant who I was. He told them, *Don Juan de Guzman*, a Gentleman of *Sevilla*, Son to a wealthy Lady, whose Husband was a *Signor* of Genoa; and, that I intended to recreate my self here, till I received certain Letters and Dispatches; and then to return to Rome.

The Inne where I lay, was the best in all the Town, and is called, *L' Hosteria di Santi Maria*; whither most of the Nobility and Gentry did resort. Here we were upon great expences, without endeavoring to do our selves any good at all in point of profit. I played sometimes, but more for Company sake, and to pass away the time, then for Money. *Sayavedra* had now no hand in the business; nor did I set his plough on work, save in deep and fat grounds, where  
there

there was hopes of a plentiful harvest. His attendance was chiefly at a great Feast, and a full board.

Guzmans  
bounty.

Having one day won about a hundred Crowns, a Captain that had command of a Galley sat by me, who I perceived to approve very well of my play, and was glad that I had got the money: and I reading in his looks that he had no store of Crowns in his Purse, but rather in extream want and necessity, I gave him six *Doblones* of two; which at that conjuncture, considering his poverty, seemed to him to be six thousand. There is a time when one single Royal is of more esteem with a man, then one thousand. The Captain made me a very thankful acknowledgement of this favour. I likewise distributed some few Crowns amongst the rest of the Spectators, to make them the better affected towards me.

I had already a design upon this Captain, and therefore made him my Friend. *Quien bien siembra, bien coge*: He that sows well, reaps well. He was called *Favello*: not that this was his proper name, but because it was given him by a Mistress of extraordinary beauty, whom he sometimes served.

We were continually together, and entred into a most perfect friendship, which was encreased daily by our mutual affections. He feasted me often on board his Galley, making the slaves row along the shore, for our greater pleasure. We did communicate many particular accidents and secrets each to other; but I never suffered him to come within my shirt, nor pierce into my bosome; *Sayavedra* onely kept the Key of that

Cabinet;

at- Cabinet, and none but he knew the secrets of  
my Soul.

This Favella was of a good behaviour, discreet,  
patient, yet full of metal; qualities well befit-  
ting so valiant a Captain, and so amorous a Soul-  
tier: by means whereof, he lived alwayes in  
want: and it is the common misfortune that ac-  
companies men thus qualified, to be alwayes in  
poverty. I used my best means to free him  
from those his extremities, and carried my self  
with so much subtilty with him, and all my other  
acquaintance, that within a few dayes I might  
have received any courtesie in that City.

Few men are ashamed to own such as are rich  
for their Kindred; but most flie from the vertu-  
ous, if they stink of poverty. Those that before  
threw stones at me, as if I had been some strange  
Cur, whom they would chase out of doors, did  
now quarrel who should feast me first at his  
house, and give me the noblest entertainment;  
offering their service to me in such comple-  
mental manner, as my outward bravery de-  
served.

That I might without the least suspicion come  
to the knowledge of him whom I had cause to  
remember, I asked them how many Brothers my  
Father had. They told me, There were three  
of them: the second Brother was dead; but the  
eldest was living in the City, a Bachelor, and a  
man of great Revenues: by the description was  
made of him, I found my self not at all decei-  
ved; for I alwayes believed he was my Un-  
cle that dealt so unhand somely with me. I dis-  
sembled my intentions, and told them, I would  
go the next day, and kiss his hands, But in  
the

the interim, he hearing of me (although he were very lame and decrepid) came leaning on his staff to visit me, conducted with the best of our Family. I was glad to see him; but sorry that he was so old: I could have wish'd him much younger, that he might have felt the smart of those jerks I was resolv'd to bestow upon him.

My Uncle asked me if I had not formerly been in *Genoa*. I told him, About three years since I pass'd that way; but could not stay longer then one night, because I was going in great haste to *Rome*, upon pretence of a certain Benefice.

*This story is at large in the first Part.*

My Uncle supposing this following story would please me, said, About seven years since (my good Cousin) there came hither a little roguish boy, whom all that saw, suspected to be a Thief, or at least a young disciple of theirs; and, that he might the more easily rob me, came to my House, giving me some particular signes and tokens of my Brother that is now in glory, as also of your Mother, telling me that he was his Son and my Nephew: he look'd so like a Rogue, that we would not own him for our Kindred, lest his infamy might reflect upon our family, and turn to our disgrace. We resolv'd to make him leave the City; which we did, by a pretty plot we devis'd for him: and I can assure you (Cousin) that he went flying from hence, like a Dog that hath a bladder with some few ratling pebles tied to his tail. All that had formerly past, he related to me very solemnly, omitting no circumstances; as the contriving the business, his making him go supperless to bed (supposing to have

have saved his sheets) and, which was worst of all, his tossing him in a blanket.

I was this little Rogue that suffered all this; apprehending the abuse so feelingly, that my anger brake forth afresh, like the wound of a murdered man bleeding in presence of his murderer.

Sir, said I, we are indebted to this Youth, if he be yet living, after those *Lavasto's* and Capers in the Air you mentioned, that above all the Noble Houses in *Genoa*, he made choice of ours to honour him; and, if such another should come to me, I would deal courteously with him, till I had informed my self of the truth; nor should he be the worse entreated, for preferring our Name before any other.

About the same time I was with my Mother in *Sevil*, and it is not as yet three years since I left her.

My Father left me a competent Revenue. I cannot boast my self to be rich, nor justly complain, that I am poor; besides, my Mother was alwayes a provident woman, well-governed, and a small waster.

My Friends with gladness heard my Relation, and were my daily Idolaters; using me with great courtesie, and good entertainment.

I bought at an (a) *Almoneda* a fair Cup-board of Plate, which cost me almost eight hundred Ducats, and invited all my Kindred, with some other of my Friends, one day to dinner; feasted them with a rich Banquet.

(a) A publick Outcry or open sale of Goods.

When the Table was taken away, we went to Cards, where I got almost fourscore Crowns, most of which I bestowed in *Barato* to the handers by: but it had been much better for



them, that I had been poor *Guzman de Alfarache* in his Rags, then *Don Juan de Guzman* in all his gallantry.

## CHAP. VIII.

*Guzman* rob. his Uncle and Kinsmen in Genoa, and embarks himself in certain Gallies bound for Spain.

*A Tale of  
Fustillos  
the Fool.*

I Had now as free access into all parts of the City, as if I had been a Town-born-child. Going one day to meet some of my new acquaintance, it was my chance to espy a Fool, which went up and down *Alcala de Henares*: This Fool, a Dog had bit by the Leg; which hurt was healed, but not forgotten: For finding him afterwards sleeping in the Sun, he took up a great stone (as much as he could lift) near the Church of *Santa Maria*, and stole to the Dog without being perceived; which stone, lifting it up as high as he could, he let it fall directly on his head. The poor Cur being almost cast into a deader sleep, fell pitifully abounding in the air; which *Fustillos* the Fool seeing, he said unto him, *Quien enemigos tiene, no duerma: He does ill that sleeps, that has an enemy.*

*Proverb.*

*A story of  
a Miracle  
wrought in  
San Mini-  
ato, and  
upon what  
occasion.*

Far different is this story, of which my self was an Eye-witness.

A Gentleman of Florence, called Captain *Giovanni Gualberio*, a Knights Son, a *Titulado*, going to Florence well armed on Horseback, he met with

with his mortal enemy, who killed his Brother: His enemy seeing the danger wherein he was (for he could not escape him) humbled himself at his feet, and with his arms across his breast, besought him for Jesus Christs sake, that was crucified, to spare his like. *Giovanno Gualberto*, pricked with a charitable compunction, willingly pardoned him. And returning back to *Florence*, they entred *San Miniato's* Church, to offer God thanks: And kneeling before a lively Crucifix, *Giovanni* desired of God, to forgive him, as he had forgiven his enemy; which words were no sooner uttered, but Christ bowed his head unto him. Whereupon *Giovanni* entred into a Religious Order, where he continued to his death. This Image of Christ stands with the head bowed unto this day, and is there revered as a great Relique, by the *Florentines* and other Catholics.

I played with them at their publick Ordinaries and Gaming-houses; they likewise meeting at my Lodging. One night I was so fortunate to carry home with me, at one clap above seven thousand Royals, still continuing *Barato* to Captain *Favello*, whom I perceived of late to be very

Proverb.  
Yo estava  
fuera de  
cuenta: o,  
en las nueve  
meses.

pensive and sad. I asked him the reason of it: He told me, His sorrow was, because about ten dayes hence the Gallies had express order to depart.

Sir, said I, there is by your Voyage offered a fair opportunity to effect what I long since intended; and without your assistance, I utterly despair of my purpose. I came hither onely to disoblige my self, and revenge a certain injury which my Father, being an ancient man, received from

a young Spaniard resident in this City: and because it may so happen, that after I have satisfied my desire, his Friends may either by their great power and influence, or by the strength of their purses, seek to detain me; I entreat you to suffer me with secrecy to board your Galley: which favour shall binde me perpetually to you.

*Favello* was very attentive to my discourse, and begged me to remit the business to him, or at least that he might be a party in this revenge. I excused myself to him; adding, that it was neither just nor fitting, that the injury being mine, the revenge should be anothers; and that he did me much wrong, to doubt that I wanted either courage or strength to execute my intension.

When he heard my resolution, he grew more quiet and calm; promising, that if I was once in his Galley, all *Italy* should not be able to do me any damage, and that he would inform me of the very day they were to set sail. He advised me to convey by *Sayavedra* my Trunks and Clothes on board the Galley, that I might be ready at an hours warning to embark my self.

Guzmans  
plot to cheat  
his kinship.

I expressed great thankfulness to *Favello*; and returned to *Sayavedra*, whom I ordered to buy four Trunks, two of which (said I) you shall place in that part of the Galley where the Captain shall appoint, the other two are to be conveyed into my Lodging, with the greatest secrecy that may be, filling them up with stones, wrapped up in some old rags, that they may not rattle in the carriage; and be careful you make them not heavier then is requisite, but let them weigh about six *Arrebas*, which is one hundred and a half.

When

When these wheels were thus set going, I went to Don Beltran's house, that good old man my Uncle. And after some other discourse, I told him how fearful I was to be long abroad in the Night, because of the Trunks I had at my Lodging; and of two of them especially, that were full of Plate, Jewels, and good store of Crowns, and indeed all the little wealth I had.

This is your own fault, Cousin, said he; for my House might very well have excused your Lodging: there I confess where you are, is the best Inne in all the Town; yet have I had experience of this truth, That to all the Chamberdoors in an Inne, your Host, his Wife, Children, or Servants, have two or three Keyes; and if you commence suit against any of them, after great trouble and cost, your Host will alledge, That you carried (what you have lost) out your self, or that you brought no such thing thither; and, that he knew not of it, because you did not at your first coming in, consign and commit it to his charge: if you will continue there still, I advise you to bring to my House your Trunks, *Proverb.* and here in my *Escritorio* they shall be secured *En la posada no ay cosa posada.* for you. He thought I spoke ingenuously, because he had seen my Vessels of Silver, my Chain, and Gold.

In the midst of our discourse comes Sayavedra, pretending a long Message to me. I watching my opportunity, said aloud, You should have told him that I am now at *Sevil* or *Rome*; go carry him the great Chain, and signifie unto him, I have done my utmost. Sir, said he, in the same Key, I must hire a Porter, for I am not able to bear this great Chain, that weighs in good Gold

seven hundred Crowns. Dispatch, said I, to some Gold-Smiths shop with it, and make choice of some Jewels that may serve for the present occasion; and leave the Chain there, or some pawn, that is of more value then what thou receivest of him, paying him interest for the loan of it: so shalt thou dis-engage thy self of the folly into which thou hast brought me; nor do I know any other remedy, but this.

My Uncle hearing what passed, said, What pawns are you to give, Cousin? I replied, Sir, he that hath foolish Servants, must often fall into great inconveniences. There is here a Gentlewoman of *Castile*, that is to be married to a Gentleman of our own Country. They are both my intimate acquaintance. These have requested me to furnish them with Apparel and Jewels for their Wedding, which is now so sudden, that I cannot give them the satisfaction that I would; and this block-head my Man had not the wit to excuse me; for I am jealous that he invited them to it without my knowledge.

The old Man seeing me so much moved at my Servants indiscretion, said to me, Cousin, let not this trouble you; you are now in a place where you cannot want Friends for such a small matter as this.

I know very well, said I, that my noble Kinsmen will assist me what they may: but amongst them all, I do not know any that are married, that can furnish me with such things as are requisite for the solemnity; nor dare I intreat them in a matter so troublesome.

Cousin, replied he, disquiet not your self: for I doubt not but from my self and other of your Friends,

Friends, to accommodate her so well, that you shall have credit by it; and, for your Trunks, send them in when you please.

I kiss'd his hands for this double favour: and coming to my Lodging, sent away my Trunks, each of them having three Keyes, surely lock'd, and strongly plated with iron.

My Uncle, when he saw *Sayavedra* enter the House, with the Porters so heavy loaded, that they were scarce able to creep along, asked my Servant what those Trunks contained, that made them so weighty?

He answered, Sir, though my Master hath in them many things of great worth, yet that which is of greatest value, is a parcel of Stones which he gathered together from all parts of *Italy*, the choicest he could procure wheresoever he came: but whither he intends to carry them, I know not.

The old Man glad of this Relation, placed them with his own hands in safe custody: and *Sayavedra* returned to me, to consult how we should deal with another rich Kinsman I had; that whilest others complained of the harm I had done them, he might not laugh and applaud his wit, that he had escaped my fingers.

In the morning *Sayavedra* taking with him the two Chains in those two Boxes that were so alike, attended me to his House, where I found him newly risen. He asked me the reason of my early visit. Sir, said I, I come to wish you better success to day, then I had last night. I intreat you to let one of your servants accompany mine to some honest Gold-Smith, that may value a Chain I have here. *Sayavedra* presently delivered

*Another  
Plot of  
Guzmans.*

livered me the little Box, wherein was that made of pure Gold. This I shewed to my Kinsman, who was much pleased with it; professing he had never seen a fairer. After he had taken a full view of it, I returned it to my Man, who with *Steffanello* my Cousins faithful Servant, went to dispatch this business: and whilst we were discoursing together, they came with a little Scroll of paper, wherein the Gold-Smith had set down, that the Chain of Gold was in fineness twenty two Caruts; and that according to its weight, it was worth six hundred fifty and three Spanish Crowns. I bid *Sayavedra* produce it again; who gave me the counterfeit one. My Cousin began to commend the curious workmanship of it: and putting it up into the Box, I said, Sir, about two Nights since, I was bitten at play by some Gentlemen of this City; but they themselves worse. I have gotten of them five thousand Royals. They have challenged me to play for a greater sum, and I am very willing to follow my good fortune while it lasts; and because all Gamesters may as well lose as win, I am unwilling to finde my self limited if they should be victorious, but rather come upon them with fresh supplies, to recover what I have lost; and perhaps gain of them. I confess I want no Money, having in my Uncle's House five thousand Crowns; yet I must not expend upon that stock: for as soon as certain Letters, which I expect from *Sevil*, come to my hands, I may not prolong their payment, nor my departure to *Rome*, one hour, for the settling of a good imployment either upon my self or a Cousin-German of mine, as it shall best please my Uncle, to whose

dis

direction I shall alwayes submit my self. You have view'd this Chain, and are assured by the Gold-Smith of its full worth. I therefore entreat you (with all secrecy; for I would not willingly be accounted a Prodigal) to furnish me with six hundred Crowns upon this Chain, paying interest for that short time I shall use them; and for this cause I leave it with you, that whether I win or lose, you may satisfie your self out of the Chain.

He seemed to be somewhat displeased with me, that for so small a courtesie I should proffer him a pawn: but I clapping on suddenly the cover of the Box, consigned it to him, forcing it into his hand; protesting, that if he did not accept of the Chain, I would by no means receive this kindness of him. When he heard my resolution, he was contented, promising to procure money; which he faithfully performed: for as I was sitting at dinner, *Steffanello* came in with the six hundred Crowns; I rewarded him for his pains, and desired him to present my service to his Master. He was no sooner departed, but my Cousin came: whose sudden approach did much trouble me; for I believed, that opening the box he had found the Chain to be false; and made that haste, to prevent his Servants paying me the Money. But this doubt was soon resolved, for he came towards me with a cheerful countenance, making many offers to me of his love and service.

Whilest we were talking, the Gentlemen-Gamesters enter the Room, calling to *Sayavedra* for the Cards. There was a well-ordered battle began betwixt us. My Kinsman perceiving  
we



we meant to fight it out, and to sit close to it, took his leave.

Being near my departure, I us'd *Sayavedra's* assistance; and sallying safely upon them, I routed them, put them to flight, leaving behind them, as a prey for me, about fifteen thousand Royals in Gold.

I gave *Barato* to those that were present, and into the Captains hand I clap'd fifty Crowns; knowing, that I purchased a Servant, without whose help all I had done was worth nothing.

The Quarrel being ended, my Captain advis'd me that on Sunday night following the Gallies were to depart. Whereupon, seeing my self straitned in time, I sent abroad my Tickers, acquainting my Friends, that the Wedding was to be solemnized on Munday next; and desired, that I might be obliged to them for their promised favour. The Ants do not return so laden to Granaries with Corn in *August*, as they came tumbling into my Lodging with Jewels, every one striving who should send me the most and the best; which indeed were so many, and so rich, that I was almost ashamed to receive them: but I recollected my self, considering they were not dear.

Guzman  
prepares to  
be gone.

My Uncle sent me in a Collar to grace the Brides Shoulders, and a Girdle suitable to it; a Feather to adorn her head-dressing, all of pure Gold, and set thick with Pearls and Stones; the three pieces valued at above three thousand Crowns.

The rest furnish'd me with Buttons, Bracelets, Ear-rings, Tablets, Carcanets, Veils, Coys, and Rings,

Rings, all very curious, rich, and of great value. These, as they came in, unknown to the Captain, I disposed into my Trunks. And the next three dayes I visited my Kindred, giving them thanks for the undeserved kindneſs they had done me.

Upon Sunday I called up my Hoſt, to whom I ſaid, I ſhall be abroad at a Friends houſe this Night at play, where ſome Gentlemen have appointed to meet: and becauſe it may be late before we have done, I intend both to ſup and lie there: therefore (good mine Hoſt) be careful of my Chamber, though I ſend *Sayavedra* home unto you. And ſo being favored by the darkneſs of the night, I went out of the Inne, leaving my Landlord two Trunks (full of fine pebbles, which I cauſed to be brought from the Sea-side, being ſomething like our craggy Chryſtal of the Mountain) to pay for my diet and lodging during the time I ſtaid in *Genoa*.

I went on board the Galley, where I was nobly entertained by Captain *Favello*. And although I prospered in my deſign as well as poſſibly I could have wiſh'd; yet did my Conſcience check me, for my unworthy dealing with my Kinſmen: This did much trouble me for a little while; but it was quickly paſt.

I conſidered what haſte mine Hoſt and the reſt would make to break open my Trunks, when they ſaw me not returned the firſt nor ſecond Nights; each one alledging the priority of his Debt; each man pretending himſelf the firſt Creditor; that ſo, by the ordinary

*Guzman  
cheats his  
Kinſmen,  
and departs  
from Ge-  
noa.*

course

course of Law in those parts, he might be first satisfied.

Me thought I did likewise see how my Host did hug himself, and laugh to see how rich I had left him: for my two Trunks, if valued according to their weight, might very well have contented him: but the worth did not answer their weight, there being in them nothing but stones; which, if he would have hang'd himself, might serve to build his Sepulchre. My old Uncle I think was well provided for, with those precious stones *Sayavedra* told he had of mine. But my Kinsman above all the rest rejoiced, (I suppose) having so sure a pawn in his hands, all pure links of Gold, with which he might pay both Principal and Interest: but when he found it was not Gold, but Alchymy, being no better (taking away its gilding and fashion) then Brass or Copper, who can imagine what strange faces he did make? Cursing my Mother for bringing forth such a *Picaro*, such a notorious Thief as I was.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

Guzman sailing towards Spain, Sayavedra falls into a Calenture or violent Fever; is mad, crying out that he was Guzman de Alfarache; throws himself into the Sea, and is drowned.

WE had such fair weather when we departed from Genoa, that the day following we doubled the Cape of Noli, and towards evening discovered (to our general joy) the Coast of Spain; but coming to the (a) Pomas de Marsella, our good wind began to leave us, and our hearts were sad and heavy, occasioned by the violent increase of a contrary wind, Egyptian Clouds, black and dark as Hell, that invironed us on all sides. The storm augmented; and an ill-guided Galley fell foul upon us, that with her Prow struck off our Rudder. Wherefore seeing our Helm and Hope lost, we despaired of any remedy to preserve us from the mercy of the Seas: but some of the ablest Mariners, making a Vertue of Necessity, placed a couple of Oars to supply our want of a Rudder, wherewith they guided the Galley, but with great danger and labour.

(a) The word Poma is used for a woman's paps or dugs, and by similitude may be taken for a Promontory standing out to the Sea.

Nor can I here express the least part of what I saw and heard, how many invocations of Saints, every one calling on that which was most famous in his own Country: what various Devotions, and general recourse to their Prayers; how many absurdities were committed amongst them,

Guzman in a great storm at Sea

them, confessing themselves one to another; as if they could be their own Ghostly Fathers, and had power to absolve them; others in a loud voice made confession of their sins, stretching out their throats towards heaven, as if God were deaf or thick of hearing.

In this woful manner did our poor weather-beaten Galley endure in misery, together with those that were in her, till the next day following; when, with the clearing of the Sky, and the brightness of the Sun, we began to recover breath; so that now all was joy, and our sorrow turned into mirth.

I did not so much fear this storm, nor so sensibly apprehend the danger thereof, as I trembled, left by a contrary wind, and the new Rigging of our Galley, I should be carried back to *Genoa*. It was not the Sea, but the Shame, that wrought upon me. This was it that made me say to my self when the winds blew, and the Seas raged, That all the rest did suffer for my sake; and, that I was the *Jonas* for whom this Tempest was raised, that I might be reduced to repentance.

Sayavedra  
sick of a  
Fever.

*Sayavedra* became so Sea-sick, that he fell into a Calenture. It would have moved the most obdurate hearts to compassion; for when we were in most eminent danger, being mad, whilest others were at Confession, he would cry out, I am the Ghost of *Guzman de Alfarache*, that goes wandering about the World: whereat he made me often both fear and laugh: but if he had revealed any of my actions, no man would have credited him, for that they saw he was distracted,

He continued committing a thousand extravagancies; repeating to all he met, whatsoever I had told him concerning my life: but that which pleased me most, was to hear him speak all these things of himself, as if he had been the real *Guzmán*.

That Night *Sayavedra* rising in his frantick fit, *Sayavedra* leapt out at the open place, where our Rudder was lost, into the Sea; whom we could never afterwards see, although the Mariner that kept watch, presently cry'd out, *Hombre a la Mar: There is a Man fallen into the Water.* We threw overboard the Hatches, and some Planks, whereon he might float till we either bore up to him with the Galley, or hoisted out our Boats: but all diligence was vain; for in a short time we were out of his call, and he buried in the Sea; all of them much lamenting his misfortune, and endeavoring to comfort me, because I seemed outwardly to be as much grieved for him, as if he had been my Brother, or the dearest Friend I had in the world.

Having put on this seeming heaviness, I knew not how suddenly to shake it off: At last they called one that had been condemned to the Gallies; he was studious, and having a Book, wherein he writ several passages, he read this unto me: and requiring their attention, he began as followeth.

There was in *Sevil* a Merchant, by Name *Micer Jacobo*, rich and honest: he had two Sons, and one Daughter, which were carefully educated; insomuch that she at her Needle excelled all others, having been bred up in a Monastery of Nuns, her Mother dying in Childbirth

*A true and strange story of a Merchant in Sevil.*

birth when she was born. Now in regard that the goods of Fortune are mutable, especially in Merchants; it so fell out, that his two Sons returning from the *Indies* with store of Gold and Silver, when they were within sight of the Bar of *San Lucar*, wanting little of their own house, there arises a huge storm on the sudden, inso-much that this unfortunate Ship ran desperately on a Rock: which blow not onely opened her womb, but devoured both men and goods immediately.

When this heavy News had gotten wing, it lightly flew to the Fathers ears, who in short time after for grief also died. Leave we these, to come to the Daughter; who having lost all her Wealth and Friends, was put to her shifts so extreemly, that she knew not how to maintain her self in the Nunnery: So that in short time, it was notified unto her, That she should either leave the House, or if she had a minde to stay, forthwith to assign her Dowry.

But not being able to comply with the second condition, she was forc'd to entertain the former. This distressed Maid was so cunning at her Needle, that her fame was spread over all the City.

To this sum, let me adde her Vertues and her Beauty, which were both Excellent. Notwithstanding all this, being sensible of her estate, she got her a Lodging, where she was accompanied with other vertuous Maidens, there with the labour of her fingers ends she lived very frugally.

The Archbishop of that City had a great desire to have some curiosities made for him, as cer-

tain wrought Chalice-clothes, neat Towels, Napkins, Handkerchiefs, and the like, to wrap the Host in, bordered about with Historical works, best fitting the use whereto they were put.

And after much enquiry, *Dorothea* was discovered (for so was this Gentlewoman called) who upon promise of good payment, entertained the work; and considering, that for such a curious piece, she must have the finest gold thread that Money could procure, she borrowed the assistance of some friends in the buying of it. And searching the Gold-beaters shops, it was her chance to come to a handiome yong fellow, well behav'd, who had newly set up; and to get custom, strove to furnish his shop exactly. Of this man she was willing to buy her Gold; and to that end told him, she had but a small sum now to lay out, but should be a better customer as her stock encreased. This young Occupier, when he had beheld the Maidens composed countenance, he fell so in love with her, that the least he could willingly give her, was all the Gold she had occasion for; and embracing the occasion he now had to expreis his affection to her, he said unto her, Mistress, if the Gold be for your turn, take what you want, and pay me now what you can well spare, and the rest as you shall receive it from your Work-Masters.

*Dorothea* made him payment of what she had; and taking what Gold she wanted, left the place of her abode, and departed: Then had the young man time to search the wound which *Cupid's* arrow had made: so vehemently was his Soul ravished with her beauty, that he could



neither eat nor drink: at last, understanding her condition was somewhat poor, he resolved to attempt the quenching of his hot desire by Marriage:

In a short time, after some few visits, he gained her good will, and those that were most conversant with her. Amongst them, there lived four Sisters; to the eldest of which they all shewed respect, as well for her wisdom, as her priority of years. Into her friendship our young man endeavors to enter, reverencing her, and presenting such tokens to her, as might best iure with the respect he bore her.

In remembrance of which, this Gentlewoman so wrought with *Dorotea*, that the Match was soon finish'd, to both their likings, but especially on *Bonifacio* his part, (so was he called:) having now gotten a Wife, he turns himself to his employment, and she to hers, working up all the Gold thread her husband made: their gains were great; and to fulfil their happiness, their love was exceeding equal.

(a) Teniente, is one that is a Substitute to another in an Office; a Lieutenant, Atencendo, as having the charge and keeping of some fort or Castle, which he faithfully keeps and maintains.

But the Devil, an enemy to peace, breaks the bonds of their affections, and followed her so close, that even when she was at Mass, or receiving the Sacrament, young Gallants, discreet in Carriage, neat in Clothes, and sweet in their Perfumes, fell a courting her, following and solliciting her, whithersoever she went. But these tricks failed, the Devil could not reap the fruit he sowed, nor did she yield to any of their temptations.

Amongst those Gallants desirous to serve her, there was one that was (a) *Teniente* of the Town, a young man, unmarried, and rich; he lived over against

against her house, and in such a manner, that he could discern whatsoever *Bonifacio* and *Dorotea* did; which he narrowly observed, so that sometimes he would discover them when going to bed. This *Teniente* making use of this occasion, did labour to receive some favour from her. But at last finding his labour in vain, he was forced to give over his (a) suit, finding an impossibility to make her any grains lighter than she was.

There went in the same Dance another self-afflicting Lover, a Gentleman of *Burges*, whose name was *Clandio*, young, discreet, and rich; but neither his great parts, nor the *Tenients* great power, could move *Dorotea* one jot, who defended her self firmly against those Eagles of *Caucasus*, that thought to make a prey of her.

(a) The Spanish word is, Bolver al puesto con la cana; To pitch down his standard, to proceed no farther.

This *Clandio* had to his servant a fine she-slave; she was so nimble-witted, and so apt to work her self into all folks affections, that she could work wonders; or, as the *Spaniards* say, could make *Water-cresses* grow on a Bed. This Slave, after she was informed of her Masters purpose, said, O my dear Master, Little oyl, and less labour, will bring this Wheel about; I will deliver the Hare into thy lap; and if I do not, call me no more *Sabina*, the Daughter of *Haia*. From that time she undertook the task; and first of all, makes a delicate little Basket, of the green Sprigs of Myrtles, Pome-citrons, and Oranges, composed in a curious manner. This Basket she bears to the Gold-beater, telling him she was Servant to a Lady-Abbeſs of a Covent, who having occasion for some of his best Gold, had sent him a token, to the end that might binde him to deliver the purest gold he had; w<sup>ch</sup> if he did, she promised

large rewards, and that she would often bestow upon him such curiosities as those religious places afford. *Bonifacio* was much gladdened with her large promises, and more with the earnest he had received, which he (as soon as he had dispatch'd the Slave with the Gold) carries up to his wife, by whom it was likewise joyfully received; and the more, because she in Childhood used the like exercises in such like places: she then entreated her husband, that when she came again, they might be acquainted together.

Proverb.  
*Cayola So-  
pa en la  
mich.*

Some six dayes after, *Sabina* returns, boasting the Gold was so good, she was come for more; and presented to him a little Image of the rinde of Limmons, from the Lady-Abbes, which he entreated her to deliver to his wife, which was above. Now was the *Sop* fallen into the Honey-pot. It fell out as par, as a Pudding for a Friars mouth: But as if she were ignorant, she said, Ah, thou naughty man, art thou married indeed? my Mistris took thee for a Batchelor, and talk'd of marrying thee to a Lay-maiden of our house, beautiful and rich. But after some such like discourse, up she goes; who when she saw *Dorotea*, after her *Moorish* fashion, ran towards her, and throws her self down at her feet; she shew'd her such reverence as is impossible to utter: And admiring several works which she there saw, she vowed to bring *Dorotea* acquainted with the Lady; and for that purpose would one day fetch her to be merry at the Monastery: so takes her leave. On the next Munday she returns with several Conserves, and other Toyes, to *Dorotea*; telling her, she had a request unto her, which was, That the ensuing Munday, being the Feast

Feast of *S. John Baptist*, and the Sunday before it their first *Vespers*, she would do her the favour to stay those two dayes with her in the Monastery, doing penance with her: and that the Abbess would take no pleasure in the Comedy, which the Nuns were afterwards to represent, if she did not come to see it acted, with other Gentlewomen appointed for her Company. *Dorothea* answered, She could willingly comply with the Lady-Abbesses command: but this was in her Husbonds power, not in hers. This were fine (said *Sabina*) if your Husband shall deny so small a request: let me not thrive, if I go out of doors this eight dayes, without his leave. *Bonifacio* not seeing the Snake that lay lurking in the grass, said, (By my life) *Sabina* hath pleaded hard, she must not be denied, seeing it is my Lady-Abbesses pleasure to have it so; and therefore I prethee (Sweet-heart) go & recreate thy self there these two days: And when (*Sabina*) these Gentlewomen that you speak of go to the Monastery, I pray order it so, that they may take my wife with them. *Sabina* being well spoken, returned thanks in good language, & so left them. And having reach'd home, she, over-swoln with joy, ran hastily and carelessly to her Master with these her crums of Comfort. *Clandio*, understanding now how *Sabina* had ordered it, provided certain women of his acquaintance (to whom he might deliver any secret) to help him towards the conclusion of his purpose.

The appointed day being come, some of them apparelled like Wives, some like Maidens, and others like grave (a) Matrons, went with *Sabina* to go fetch *Dorothea*. They come to her house, knock at the door: her Husband opens, who

Proverb.  
La culbrea  
esta entre  
la yerba.

(a) The  
Spanish  
word is,  
Duena, and  
signifieth  
an ancient  
Gentlewo-  
man that is  
a widow.

having before espied them, call'd to his Wife to hasten, supposing those were they that were to call her. Down comes *Dorotea*, no less innocent then contented: all lovingly saluted her; and her Husband having consigned her over to them, they place her in the midst, and so joyfully set forward on their Voyage. As they were walking through the Monastery, one of them with a Veil on her head, and of more reverend aspect then the rest, cries out, Ay me, forgetful wretch that I am, we have forgot to call *Donna Beatriz* the new-married Bride: Another answers, By the Bones of my Father, you say true; I no more thought on her, then I remember the first Smock I wore. Let us turn down here, and we shall be there immediately. Then she that led the way, having a *Rosario* hanging about her neck, brought them to *Claudio* his house, where they knock: A Slave out of the window asks their business: one answers, Run and tell your Mistress we stay for her. The Slave made as if she had gone to deliver this Message, and anon returns with this answer, That her Mistress would come as soon as she had fastened on her Mantle; and desired them in the mean while to rest themselves in the Hall. Whereupon, they entred through a spacious Hall, well furnish'd, where they remained; onely two of them passed forward with *Dorotea*, into a middling square room, hung with Cloth of Silver, with a Bed suitable thereto; where these three sat down, and had scarce warmed the Cushions, when the two that were with her began to cry, Good, good, what does this *Donna Beatriz* mean to make us stay so long! Fie, what a tedious thing is this! I care not,

Proverb.  
No me a  
cordava  
mas della,  
que de la  
primera ca-  
misa, que  
me vesti.

not, says the other, if I go in and see what she is doing: I prethee Sister, good Wench go with me, and help to hasten her. Which was no sooner said, but they both vanish'd, leaving *Dorotea* alone.

When all were gone, *Claudio* comes in, and sitting upon one of the Cushions next *Dorotea*, he began to court her, and discover the plot he had made to get her there. When she perceived how she was betraid, poor *Dorotea* was not a little troubled; for she knew him by sight, and guess'd at his pretensions. Tears and prayers were the best Orators she could use; yet both too weak: she resisted as well as she could; but *Claudio* courting her one while with kinde words, and when they could not prevail, breaking forth into actions of violence against her will, he pluckt from her such fruits as he could reach to, but not as he desired. But in the end, when she saw that *Claudio* still got more ground upon her person, she yielded up the Fort. They two were alone, the door fast lock'd; the term long, (two dayes) *Claudio* with his Friends at hand, she a lone woman; he strong, and she weak: They fared daintily, dined, suppt, and slept together; but their pleasure was but short, & their rest unexpectedly interrupted. For the Devil never made Pye, but himself eat part. Whilest they were in their jollity, the house was destitute of order; the Servants by glutting themselves, took the wrinkles from their guts; and pulling the faucets out of the Hogsheads, drank so liberally, that at last they crept to Bed, as a Cat doth up a wall, upon all four: Leaving the Chimney full of fire, and a great deal of dry Wood standing by, the fire

Proverb.  
Tr a las ca-  
mas : gate-  
ando.

takes hold of the brands, and they communicated their flames to their fellows; so that towards midnight, all that quarter of the house was burnt, and not perceived, so fast they slept. It was the *Vespers* of *S. John*; and the *Teniente* using to round the Town to prevent disorder, discovered the fire, which led him to *Claudio* his house, where they knock'd, but in vain; some being weary, others drunk, they all slept hard: when no other way could be found to get in, they broke down the gates; in doing which, the noise and clamour awaked *Claudio*, who being amazed at the noise, hastened with his Sword in his hand (he and *Dorotea* being both naked) and opened the door; and when he saw the fire, return'd for something to cover him, that so he might escape by flight. The *Teniente* thought, that some strangers might get into the house, (seeing the Chamber-door open) and were perhaps rifling the room: hasting thither to secure the goods, he found these two Lovers running about the Chamber to seek their clothes; and having them in their hands, neither had their own, but interchanged through haste. The *Teniente* straight knew *Dorotea*, and was extremely astonished; for though he saw it, he hardly had the faith to believe his own eyes. So desperately he was bent upon revenge, that he presently sent them both to Prison; but was most incensed against *Dorotea*, for rejecting him, and admitting of another. They carried her away, her face being covered with a Mantle, and ordered that she should not be seen, till Information should be made against her.

But observe what an easie thing it is, to rub  
spots

spots  
sooner  
of his  
a good  
of Ba  
in her  
Cover  
on her  
entrea  
in tha  
Maid  
gent a  
water  
comm  
W  
which  
see h  
on h  
rotea  
some  
had s  
parel  
know  
the S  
the I  
refer  
his C  
idle  
app  
wou  
so g  
had  
Clau  
acco  
che

spots out of Icing-glass. The Judge was no sooner that night in his bed, but *Dorotea* was out of his reach: For *Sabina* takes out of her lodging a good fat Capon, and a good piece of Gammon of Bacon, Bread, a Flagon of Wine, and Money in her Purse; and clapping a Bed, Sheets, and Coverlet on her head, with a little Basket on her arm, away she trugs to the Prison; she entreated the Jaylor to give her leave to carry in that Bed and Supper for one of her Masters Maids, who because she was too slow on so urgent an occasion, in bringing a Bucket to draw water for the fire; the *Teniente* in his heat had committed her.

With this excuse, and four Royals of four which she gave him, he lets her in: he could not see her face, by reason of the luggage she bore on her head. In this manner she goes to *Dorotea*, who she found almost dead; but after some discourse which passed between them, she had so much life in her, as to put on *Sabina's* apparel, and to try whether the door-keeper could know her or not: she called him, and gave him the Supper; which when he had tasted, he takes the Flagon of Wine, and gives it a good swig, reserving the remainder till the next day. Whilst his Corps was feasting, *Dorotea's* brains were not idle: for taking up the Bed on her head, she approaches unto him, and told him, The Maid would neither eat nor sleep, till she was released: so goes out, leaving *Sabina* in her place, who had so ordered it, that *Dorotea* should return to *Clandio* his house (as she did) and the next day accompanied with some women, she again reaches her own house, as she left it. The *Teniente*  
intended



(a) The  
principal  
Magistrate  
and Chief  
Comman-  
der in Se-  
vil, is call'd  
there by the  
name of  
Assistente.

intended to be deeply revenged on them. But *Claudio* having notice of the business, intreated a Gentleman to go to the (a) *Assistente* of *Sevil*, and desire him to come in person to the Court, and free him from the injury, which was so unjustly done unto him.

The *Teniente* likewise at Dinner-time going to his window, presently espied *Dorotea* and her Husband at the Table. He admired how this should be: Hereupon he sends to the Prison, to know who had freed the woman he had sent the night before. Answer was made, that she was there. Then did he stamp, and doubred his own wits. This day past, and the next came the *Assistente* with his two *Tenientes*, who willed that *Claudio* should be called forth, and the woman that was imprisoned with him; who when they came (according to their and the Keepers Confession) were approved the same: There was none but knew *Sabina* was his Slave; so finding nothing against them, they were set at liberty. Yet *Claudio* paid soundly; for when he came home, he found the greater part of his house and goods burnt, together with a Sister of his that accompanied *Dorotea* from her house; and with her, his *Dispenser*, and three other servants. This affront to his honour (for it was generally known) did so afflict his minde, that he fell grievously sick: And not desiring life to any other end, then to lament for his follies; on his amendment he retired himself to the top of a Mountain in a desert place, where betaking him to the Religious Order of *S. Francis*, he ended his dayes. *Dorotea* remained with her Husband as before; the *Teniente* as much discontented as

ever;

er; and *Bonifacio* (honest man) untouch'd in honour: For *Sabina*, and most that knew the front, died in few dayes after.

With this Story, and other entertainments to beguile the time, we arrived in *Barcelona*.

Being on shore, I told my Friend, Captain *Guzman* <sup>leaves Ca-</sup> *Sevil*, That in the storm I made a Vow not to <sup>ptain Fa-</sup> *three nights in any part of Spain*, till I came <sup>vello.</sup> *Sevil*, to visit the Image of our *Lady del Valle*, whom I had offered my Devotions, and would consecrate something to her for my Preservation.

It grieved him to the soul to lose my company; but it could not be otherwise; for I was in fear, lest they of *Genoa* should pursue me in some small Vessel.

So having bought three Beasts to carry my self and my Trunks, I entertained a Servant; and pretending I was for *Sevil*, took leave for ever.

---

THE

---



# THE ROGUE

O R,

The second part of the Life of  
GUZMAN *de* ALFARACHE.

---

The Second B o o k.

---

## CHAP. I.

*Guzman departs from Barcelona to Saragosa:  
where he peruses the Statutes of Gotam-Colledge,  
otherwise called, The Hospital of Fools.*



Lying from the mischief that might follow me, I went out of *Barcelona*: forsaking the beaten Rode, I betook my self to unknown paths. I talk'd of Vows that I had made, and invented a thousand other lyes, that I might defeat the spies of their purpose, nor finde the pricking of the Hare that was now far from the Hounds.

The Mules were mine own: my Servant but newly come to me, and unacquainted with my tricks:

I staid not long in one place; and alwayes changing my Clothes, because I would not appear twice in one dreis. In this manner I travelled till I came to *Saragosa*; rejoycing that I was arrived to that noble and famous City.

I walked the next day through that spacious street which they call the *Cosso*, which was much graced by a fair young Widow I viewed at a Window. I made more turns about her House, then a Horse doth in a Mill; and although she did not seem offended with me, yet I thought she was weary of my foolish silence; and said to her self, What painted As is this? What Piece without Powder? that hath made me wait so long, making proffers as though he would shoot, and hath not as yet discharged the Musket. She went from the window, leaving me to expect her return. At last, finding my hopes deceived, I went to my Lodging, and in a careless manner I questioned with my Host concerning this Lady; who told me, She was very beautiful, well descended, and very rich.

Whilest I was talking with mine Host, my head being well stuf, by reason of an extream cold, I pluckt a Handkerchief out of my pocket, and blew my Nose: which having done, I look'd upon it, as if that Oyster had afforded me a Pearl; it being the Custome of that Countrey so to do.

The crafty Rogue mine Host, perceiving that Guzman I scoffed at their Customes, spoke thus unto me <sup>put into a</sup> in a low voyce, *Fly, Sir, fly; Hide your self,* <sup>needleless</sup> *quickly, quickly.* <sup>fear by his</sup> Poor and miserable man that I <sup>hosts means</sup> was, how ill did those words sound! How my heart was scorch'd with them! He had scarce ended

ended his words, when at two leaps I got me behinde the Curtains of the Bed: He being ignorant of my Villanies, thought I had done this innocently, as being startled at the suddenness thereof: and so instantly breaking into a loud laughter, he merrily said, I perceive, Sir, you are not troubled with the Gout: your Worship may come forth if you please; as God would have it, the storm is past, and you may safely shew your self upon the Hatches. I came forth as pale as ashes, with death pictur'd in my face, admiring that the sudden fright had not made me leap out of the window into the streets.

I dissembled it the best I could, lest I might raise a dust to put out mine own eyes. Being come to my self, I ask'd him what the mystery was. I pray Sir, said he, content your self, and give me two shillings from you. I put my hand in my pocket, and threw him forth a Royal, asking wherefore he demanded it. He falling into a louder vein of laughing, with a merry look, said, Sir, I have a *Procuracion* substituted by the *Administrators* of an *Hospital*, for the recovering of certain rights which I am to Challenge of them that come to my house, if they commit any Forfeiture contained in the said *Procuracion*. In good faith, if my Hosts laughing had not cleared the doubt, I verily believe I should have fallen dead for fear: His breath put breath into me. So that seeing him upon the merry pin, I said unto him, (a) *Cuerpo de mi*: As I am an honest man, since I have paid the penalty, I will know the fault I have committed. Because your Worship (*sayes mine Host*) seems

(a) *A common Oath or Affirmation in Spain: English, Body of me,*

to be a discreet Gentleman, I will reade you a  
 Bead-roll of such Statutes I have for recovery  
 of those Amercements, and those Penalties  
 wherewith they are to be punished, who incur  
 the danger of them. This Royal is a Fee goes  
 to the Beadle for your entrance. He went his  
 way, and returns with a great Book under his  
 arm; wherein, he said, he set down the Admit-  
 tance of those of that Corporation. He began  
 to reade some of their Statutes, whereof I will  
 repeat unto you, such as remain in my Memory:  
 And they are these.

## The Statutes and Constitutions of

GOTAM-COLLEDGE:

OR,

## The Hospital of Fools.

WEE Reason, sole Sovereign of the World,  
 not acknowledging any Superior: For the re-  
 forming of mens manners against the perverse wil-  
 fulness of Folly, which hath multiplied in such abun-  
 dance, to our notable detriment, and the damage of  
 all Mankind: For to avoid the inconveniences  
 which so corrupt a Canker may cause, that it may  
 not dilate it self any farther, to the destruction of  
 our loving Subjects, whose welfare we tender as our  
 own; We Will and Command, Publish and Proclaim  
 these our Laws, to all that are or shall be born, by  
 the Power and Consent of our Council of State,  
 That they be held for such as are now by us establi-  
 shed; and that they be punctually observed in all and  
 the least points herein specified, as you will answer it

to your peril, and incur the punishment, which for the infringing of our Laws, is in that case provided.

Moreover, for the due execution of Justice, we in our wisdoms have thought it meet, to nominate certain Officers of sufficiency and trust, such as shall be requisite for this so important a business. And therefore we do assign for Judges, good Policy, Curiosity, and Sollicitude: To the end that they representing our own proper Person, may uprightly administer Justice: giving them full and plenary Authority, to apprehend, release, punish or pardon any person or persons upon just cause; referring our said Judges to be directed by these our Laws and Ordinances. Furthermore, we do substitute for our Attorney General, Diligence; and our Beadle that shall warn them to the Court, shall be Fame.

I. First therefore, any person or persons that shall talk to themselves in the streets, or in their private house, being alone, we condemn them for Fools for three Moneths: Within which time, we will and command, That they reform this their foolery; and in case they shall not, Our pleasure is, They have a more peremptory time allotted of some three Terms, or more: within which time they shall bring a Certificate of their amendment, upon pain of being held for convicted Fools; and we command our Ancients of the Company to bring in their Evidence, and punish them as violaters of our Laws.

II. Item, They that shall walk through any Brick or Stone-Pavement, with care or study, pitching their Toes or Heels in a direct line, side, or corner of the stones, shall be condemned as aforesaid.

III. Item, They that walk with their Cloaks under

under one arm, and passing the wall with their hand, so as to make Indentures with their fingers, let them be admitted Scholars of our Colledge. Provided they have six Moneths of approbation allowed: In which time we command them to be reformed: Otherwise, we Ordain, That the Dean of our Colledge put his Coat upon him (according to Custome) his Cap, and his Bawble, with the other Ornaments, and afterwards be held a professed Fool.

IV. Item, They that play at Bowls, when they have thrown their Bowl, if it run awry, and they likewise follow it awry, thinking their Bowl shall incline the same way their body doth, shall dye in this their sin. And we command the like be understood of those, who seeing something fall from a high place, shrink their shoulders, wry their mouths, or turn up the white of their eyes. Likewise of those, that cutting with Sheers, or blunt Knives, shall draw their mouth on t'one side like a Playce, loll out their tongue like a Calf, wrinkle up their cheeks like a stretched piece of Parchment, &c. Our pleasure is, That they also take the degree of Fools.

V. Item, They, who having sent their servant on an errand, shall wait for him at the door, imagining that in so doing he may haste the more; We condemn such to acknowledge their error, on pain, That in case of refusal they be severely proceeded against.

VI. Item, They that from a window spit down, whether it be to take (as with a Plummets) the evenness of the building, or to see if his spittle lights on such a stone which his eye hath selected; We command that they retract this their folly on short warning, upon pain of being judg'd publick Professors of the same.



VII. Item, They who travelling, shall enquire of Passengers, how far to such a Town, thinking by this they shall the sooner reach it; We injoyne them for penance, The badness of way, The Carriers jading of them, and mine Hosts cozening of them: Not inflicting greater punishment, out of the hopes of their amendment.

VIII. Item, They who when they make water, streak the wall with their urine, as if framing some antick figures, or shall piss in the dust, making circles; We comma d they do so no more, on pain to be punished by their Judge, and delivered over to an Ancient of the House.

IX. Item, They who have but little meat before them, shall divert themselves from feeding, so entertain the company with discourse, minding more to fill other mens ears, then their own bellies, by which means they rise a-hunger'd; Forasmuch as these are dy'd in the wooll, we allow them a Pill, and remit them to be Registered amongst incurable Fools.

X. Item, They who shall buy the courser sort of Victuals for the saving of their Purse, as if a Physician, Apothecary or Surgeon, were not much deayer then the best meat; We condemn them to a general disgracing of themselves, declaring them to be professed Fools.

XI. Item, They who in Summer-nights sit still their breech ake, gazing on the Clouds, and forming the figures of Serpents, Lyons, or other Beasts; We pronounce them, Brothers of this Fraternity, but not to be capable of the Priviledges thereof, nor that they have any Wax-lights allowed them on Festival-days.

XII. Item, They who wearing black or white Shoes, shall, to take away the dust from them, clean them

them with their Cloak, as if that were not more costly; We condemn them for neat Fools: And in case they be Noble-men, for their greater honour, we will have them treble Fool'd.

XIII. Item, They who meeting a friend they have not long seen, shall say, Are you alive, Sir? Is there such a man upon the Earth? when he was never in Heaven, and stands before him; such must we have inrolled: And we further will, That all such bear a Mark of Admiration; and that during our pleasure they never go without it.

XIV. Item, They who blowing their Nose upon their Hankerchief, look steddily upon it, and pry into it, as if some Pearls had dropt from thence, which they seem to secure, by wrapping them closely up; Such we condemn for Brothers of our said Foundation; and as oft as they thus offend, we will, That they give an Alms to the Hospital of incurable Fools.

When he was come thus far, and I ready to burst my heart with laughing I said unto him, Now seeing you have advised me of these things, that I may correct my errors, tell me whereabouts this Hospital is. But the night parting us, I left the rest to another dayes reading.

Having a desire to fetch a turn or two before the Widows Lodging, I call'd my Servant, to fetch me a gallant Sute of Clothes that I had in my Trunk; and taking my Sword under my Arm, I walk'd into the City with a heart so well contented, that I would not have changed my present estate with any Prince in Christendom.

At the corner of a street I met with two Women; the one reasonably handsome, the other seemed

*His wench  
picks his  
pocket.*

to be her Servant. I stopt them in their way; and they stood still. I discoursed with one of them; and going to put my hands under her Mantle, the crafty Whore, without any sudden retreat, feigned to defend from that friendly violence. Whilest I was busying my hands about her face and neck, she with hers was not idle; but putting them into my Pocket, took out all the Money, and what else was there: and in this heat of mine, I had no feeling of this ache. She had no sooner taken from me about one hundred Royals, but she said, (Good Sir) let me intreat you to have patience, and expect me at the corner of this street, from which you saw us come; and, at my return I will conduct you to my house, where lodges onely my self and my Maid; where I assure you I will be at your service. Go (dear Sir) whither I have directed you, that you may not be seen in my company: for though I am a married Woman, and of honourable Parents, yet you seem a Gentleman of that nobleness, that I would willingly hazard both my person and reputation, to content you.

I stood up close in the corner, where I continued from eight at night, till the clock struck eleven. When I perceived it was so late, I imagined she had some Gallant to her Servant, who would not let her depart this night: nor could I so much blame her; for my self would have done the like, if once she had been within my doors.

The next night I went to the same place, where I found all quiet, no noise or sign to be heard at any door in all the street. I fetcht many turns, cough'd, spit, made a noise with my feet: but all was in vain, and to no purpose.

I went towards my Inne: by the way I espied at

a window a bulk, that by the voice I knew to be a Woman; her face I could not see, it was so dark. I began to talk youthfully (or rather foolishly) to her: She told me, I was mistaken; but she had a Kirchin-Maid, a Drudge, that scoured the Pots and Pans, to whom I might address my self (perhaps) with success.

In the midst of our discourse, comes out one of *Beelzebubs* Curs, that barked so loud, that it was impossible for us to hear or understand each other. Seeking to remedy this, I saw by the wall a little black thing, which I supposed to be a stone: presently I catch'd it up in my hands; but it was not a stone, nor any thing so hard: I quickly found that I had besmeared my Fingers; and striking it off, I flung my Hand so strongly against the wall, that I was much pained: and to ease the tingling of my nails, I put my fingers to my mouth; but I soon repented of what I had done; my often spitting would not mend the mistake: and feeling in my Pocket for my Handkerchief to help my self, there was no such thing to be found. This made me mad, to see how my mouth and hands were enamell'd: and, to encrease my vexation, the scurvy Dog did so persecute me with his bawling, that the Gentlewoman was forced to withdraw her self from the window, and I to seek out something to free me from this odious stink. I rubb'd my teeth against the wall, and in a rage returned to my Inne, with an intention to return the next night to that street, to meet with the same Wench that had thus abused me.

*Guzmans  
bad fortune  
with wen-  
ches.*

## CHAP. II.

*Guzman leaves Saragosa, and comes to Madrid, where he turns Merchant, marries, and becomes Bankrupt.*

**B**Eing at my Lodging, I went to the Well, and pretending there to refresh my self (because my Servant should not be privy to this disgraceful accident) I caused him to draw me up two Buckets of water; with the one I wash'd my hands, and with the other, my mouth; having rubb'd off the skin from both, and yet I was not satisfied, I had such a conceit of this filthy odour, or rather ordure. Nor could I afterward sleep, for thinking on that truth which my Doxy had told me, That in all my life I should not meet with a more quick and nimble hand. At last I considered with my self, that a lusty strong Mule could hardly bear the Silver, Gold, Pearls, precious Stones and Jewels, which I had stolen out of *Genoa*; and therefore why should I vex, for being cheated of so small a trifle?

(a) *Pilar de Saragosa, one of the most famous Churches in the world, for that our blessed Lady appeared to the Apostle James, and commanded him there to build a Church in her honour, Pedra Pinada, l. 10. Monarch. Eccles. cap. 35. sect. 4.*

In the morning I rose, and went to Mass, and visited the image of our Lady (a) *Pilar*, which is one of the most remarkable places for Devotion in the world.

Afterwards in the same street, I saw the widow washing her hands in the window. I placed my self at the corner of a wall, looking on her with a wanton eye, and a smiling countenance.

And whilst I was performing this my love-exercise,

erise. she did me the honour to stand still in the same place. Many Gentlemen past by, yet I thought none of them equal to me, either in the bravery of my Apparel or Person. All in me was in true Mood and Figure, in a full and perfect Symmetry in respect of the whole Frame. This I thought was the reason why I was more respected by her, then all the rest of her Servants.

Night approached, and she withdrew from the window, courteously glancing her eyes towards me: and when I saw the Casement shut, I went home to my lodging, considering with my self what course were best for me to steer.

The next morning when I was ready to go forth, my Host acquainted me, That there was in the City a great Uproar & Commotion, about the murder of a Person of Honor in the Market-place: and because I durst not adventure my self amongst that great confluence of people, for fear of being known, I resolved to depart the City; which I did that day, and came to *Alcala de Henares*, where I stayed eight days, *Alcala, a University, about one days journey from Madrid.* it seeming to me one of the most pleasant places I had seen since I left *Italy*: and, if the love of the Court had not elapt Wings to my feet, I had continued there much longer: but because *Madrid* was

*Patria communis, The common Mother to us all;* and a large field, where every man might range at pleasure; and those that lodge in one and the same house, scarce know each other: The thought of my security drew me thither.

(a) The face of the Court and Town was quite changed since my departure. There was no Greer *(a) Madrid much changed in a few years.* to be heard of, nor any remembrance of such a man. In those Fields where I left Trees, I found Houses; Children become Men; Young grown Old; and the Old dead.

My lodging pleased me so well, that in a whole week I never went abroad, being chained at home by the sweet conversation of my Hostels; who, besides her Beauty, had a very acceptable and discreet carriage.

*Guzman  
turns gal-  
lant.*

Here I began to meditate upon my course of life; and resolved first upon Pride, being every day more gallant then other; and getting me a good Horse, and two Servants to attend me. I thought in this brave equipage with more ease to sell those Jewels I brought from *Genoa*.

My Hostels took notice of my ranting and prodigal expences; and having found out my disease, she knew what remedy to apply.

*(a) Proverb  
Davidas  
abandon  
pennas.*

Amongst those many she-friends of hers that came to visit me, one of them brought with her a young Wench of exquisite beauty and wit. To this did I address my self: she answering me with disdain. But *(a)* Gifts mollifie Rocks; and with often Presents I made her very flexible. I continued this friendship with her some few dayes; in all which time she was like an *Alchymist*, to melt my Money, and extract quintessence from me.

*Guzman  
again in  
love.*

She was alwayes craving something of me, yet with that subtilty, as if she had been a woman of much riper years: not a Courtezan in the City that could surpass her in her Art. Nor do I wonder how, being so young she could be so good a Proficient, considering how able a Tutoress she had of her Mother.

*(b) A place  
so called in  
the High  
street of  
Madrid,  
near unto  
San Felipe.*

One day she entreated me, that I would buy her a Gown of Crimson-Damask, which a Sale-man at the *(b) Puerta del Sol*, had to sell, trimmed with Gold-lace, and richly imbroidered; the price one thousand Royals. I was troubled at her demand,

and

and the excessive liberty she assumed to her self, to dispose of my Money at her pleasure; and though I loved her dearly, yet would I not permit her, *Questa* Unkindness grows between *a bala en biesto*, to stop my Vessel lest she should suck me dry and not leave one drop in all my hog-head. I seemed angry at her request, and she at my denial. The Mother and Daughter were both displeased with me, and consulted with my Hostess. And thus the Wolf and the Fox agreed against me.

When I was at Dinner, I perceived an *Alquazil* German arrested. *de Corte* coming towards me; who, when he was within hearing, cried out aloud, *Aqui morira Sampson, y quantos con el son: Here shall Sampson die, and all that are with him.* Proverb. My end (said I to myself) is now at hand. I thrust the Table from me, and rose up in a great passion. Then said the *Alquazil* to me, Pacifie your self, Sir, for we come not to apprehend you for a Thief. The Catch-pole German much distressed. had made good the door; nor could I escape from the window, it being so far from the street, without apparent hazard of my neck.

I recollected my self, and boldly asked him his business with me. He drew out a VVarrant, by vertue whereof the *Alcaldes* had commanded him to apprehend me upon the breach of a Law of theirs, *De (b) Visitacione Virginum; For cracking of (b) The Maiden-heads, and deflowring of Virgins.* Spanish phrase is, Por el Virgo de Justilla.

The Devil take thee for a wicked woman, and me for a perfect Villain, (said I) if this be not a most false Accusation.

The *Alquazil* smiling upon me, said, I believe you, yet I cannot release you: therefore put on your Cloke, and go with me to Prison.

I did fear this was but the Prologue to the Tragedy



*Guzman  
treats in  
private  
with the  
Alquazil.*

*The Alqu-  
zil an ho-  
nest man.*

*The Alqu-  
zil wrought  
to favour  
Guzman.*

*He com-  
pounds the  
difference.*

*Guzman  
leaves his  
lodging.*

*Guzman  
takes a  
house.*

gedy that would succeed; and but a pretence to cheat me of my wealth: for my Trunks I thought would be as safe in the Street as there; and whether to remove them, I knew not. I took the *Alquazil* aside, and entreated him, that he would devise some means, that they might not do me this injury; for that I was certain they intended to rob me, and nothing else.

He was an honest man, (which was to me no small good fortune, considering his Calling) and knew my innocency, as one that was acquainted with the contrary Party's course of life.

He left his servants to secure me, whilest he went to finde out my Adversaries, who were in my Hostesses Chamber. He proffered to end the difference; and seeing them obstinate, he protested to swear the Truth, and discover their Rogneries, if they would not accept of some reasonable satisfaction.

This made them refer the business wholly to him; who presently compounded with them for two thousand Royals. The Mother affirming upon Oath, That I promised to pay for the Gown, and double the value of it in Money. The sum I paid, and went to the Registers Office, and cancelled the Bill.

And now, although it was almost dark, I would not be perswaded to lodge one night in the house of this perjured woman: for having paid the punishment of that sin, wherein I had not offended; and the price of that meat whereof I had not tasted, I provided me a House, put all things in order, and withdrew thither.

The *Alquazil* pried my case, but bade me be contented, for I was not the first they had ser-  
ved.

ed. I my self very lately (sayes he) saw one of the strangest cases in this nature, that I believe you ever heard of.

There was in this Town a beautiful Gentle- *A Tale of a cunning Queen.*  
woman, who being necessitated, came hither to seek some means to live: she for a while profest her self a Maid. A Prince in this Town having a minde to her, procures her love: He gives her a Ticket under his hand, to pay her 800 Ducars; in which Note she would have it set down, that that sum was bestowed by way of Dowry. The Prince failed of payment for her cur Lemmon at the day; she puts his Bond in suit, he answers not; she gets out an Execution, and recovers the Money.

There was lately another not much unlike this. *A digression to another story, not much unlike the former.*  
A mean old woman having a beautiful Daughter, and not having wherewith to marry her, makes sale of her Virginity; and so prosperously, that she did it many times. One day, a gallant, single, and rich Gentleman, wan her affection, enjoy'd her, and did liberally requite her. The old Mother being covetous, made her complaint to a Gentleman of the same place, aggravating her and her Daughters abuse. He in a jesting way answered, Thou knowest (*Grabrina* *lena*, so was she called) the Illustrious Signor General will shortly be here; my counsel is, That you and your Daughter *Ricciolina*, deliver unto him, how Signor Comde N. hath deflowred your Daughter; and both weeping, further declare, That he hath falsified his word, having promised her two hundred Crowns, or get her a Husband. It was not long after that his Excellency came, before whom these women appearing, they

they opened their Accusation. Upon which relation his Excellency was much moved, and sent for the *Conde*; who when he appeared, was demanded, whether at any time he had had conversation with *Ricciolina* the Daughter of *Lena*? he ingenuously confest: Whereupon the *General* gave him such a fatherly reprehension, that he began to blush. Then calling forth *Ricciolina*, who stayed in the next room, he spoke in this manner; *Signor Conde*, if we should be severe, your punishment would be great; but for the love we bear you, we pardon your life, but condemn you to pay the double of your promise (which is four hundred Crowns) before you depart.

To this the *Conde*, with a decency most befitting, replied, Most Illustrious Sir, I have held my peace, most befitting your humble Servant, and shall willingly bear what burthen your Excellency shall lay upon me: but as for these women, their Accusations are false: For though I had conversation with her, I gave her the agreement, and somewhat more. Notwithstanding, if you will so have it, I'll disburse so much Money, craving no longer time then to fetch it; which Money, putting into your Excellencies hands, I shall leave it to your disposal. Having leave, he fetcht it; and while he was gone, the *General* took occasion to question *Ricciolina*. But first speaking to *Lena*, he said, Tell me (*Lena*) have you carried a good hand over your Daughter? Yes marry have I, said she. And did you never leave her alone, a day, or a night? No, Sir, quoth she. How came it then, that you should suffer your Daughter to be forced by the

*Conde*?

*Conde*? And you *Ricciolina*, having your Mothers company, why did you not resist? Then both weeping, said, The *Conde* was too strong; and therefore they besought his Excellency for Justice.

By this time the *Conde* was come, and had told out 400 Crowns, which the *General* gave to *Ricciolina*, with this Item, Take them Daughter, and look well to them, lest they are taken from thee: and *Lena*, have a care of your Daughter and her Money: So God be with you.

When they were gone, his Excellency thus said to the *Conde*, Get you after them, and regain the Money by fair means or foul, and give me the account thereof. The *Conde* no sooner heard it, but with a servant of his roundly overtook them; and saluting them kindly, accompanied them to their house: where when he was entred, he demanded his Money. And seeing intreaties were too weak, he assayed by force. But *Ricciolina*, who had bosomed her Purse, fought stoutly with her Nails and Teeth. The Mother to her assistance comes running, who so wounded the *Conde* with their womanish weapons, that he was far from recovering the Purse. Their noise had by this time called abundance of spectators: Some of which seeing the *Conde* all bloody, parted them; and having wash'd his hands and face, repairs to the *General*. They likewise not thinking he had gone thither, went with a further Complaint. But the *Conde* having first got thither, was first heard: then the women, who accused him for attempting to rob them, and threatening to kill them.

Then

Guzman's  
riches.

Then said the *General*, He hath not your Money, hath he? No: replied they. How could you prevent him? They answered, We did so well bestir our selves, that he could not. Very good said he: And you *Ricciolina*, if your Mother had not hept you, could you, do you think, withstand him? Yes indeed, quoth she, I fear him not, nor value him a straw; I think my self as strong as he. Then said the *General*, Where is the Purse? Pour out the Crowns on the board, Daughter, and see if they are all there. Which being done, the *General* perceiving the *Conde* was abused, said, *Signor Conde*, take your Money again, you have fought for it hard, it is yours. And to the young Quean, with a stern countenance, Thou lewd Baggage, couldst thou defend thy Money, and not thy self? Get you home, and let me hear no more of neither of you, lest I have the one whipt for a Whore, and the other carred for a Bawd. After the *General* had thus pronounced the Sentence, the business was ended, to their shames, and his own commendation. Then the *Alquazil* left me, and I betook me to my Collar and Girdle my Uncle sent me, which being of such value, that by report they might be discovered, I defaced and altered the fashion of them, that they might not be known, taking out the Precious Stones and Pearls that were in them, with the point of my Knife; and I thought I did very wisely, lest by preserving them as they were, I should make work for the Hang-man. With these Stones I began to turn Jeweller; first, informing my self of their worth, and causing them to be set, some in Circles, Rings, Pendants for the ears; so that

of the same Gold and Stones, I made several pieces. Some I sold for ready money; others I lent out at Weddings for good gains: some I risked away at Dice. My stock increased; and I knew how to sell at dear Rates upon trust, and to use my Money to the best profit.

There was to be sold near adjoyning to my House, a piece of Ground to build upon; part of this I bought, thinking it better to have a House of my own, then to be troubled with often removes of Household-stuff. I paid him his full price in good Royals, holding the same for ever: the Lord onely receiving to himself, the yearly Rent of two Royals. *Guzman buys ground*

Upon this I built a handsome house finely seated, both for pleasure and entertainment; which cost me three thousand Ducars. There did I live with that poor trading I had, like a *Fucox*; and might have ended my dayes like a Prince, if bad Fortune, which found me out where-ever I was, had not prevented me. *Builds a house of his own.*

There dwelt near unto me such another Merchant as my self, a Jack of all Trades, who proposed his Daughter to me in Marriage. He was rich; she young, and a perfect beauty: he promised me with her three thousand and five hundred Ducars; and because he seemed greatly to affect me, we quickly agreed; the Writings were sealed, and our Nuptials solemnized. *Guzman buys Merchant, and marries.*

Some few dayes after, being at my Father in Law's house at dinner, he told me, (Son) I am now grown old, and have in my life-time past through many troubles. Wherefore I will deliver thee my opinion, as one that is much interested in thy good. *Good counsel to Guzman.*

First then, consider, that if thou dost diminish one farthing of thy stock, it will soon be consumed: I shall be always ready to assist and hold you up by the chin, that you may not sink, if it be in my power to bear you up; but if (as God forbid) your expectations should be deceived, take Physick in time, and by a provident forecast, prevent all future sickness.

*Guzmans  
father in  
Law's plo'.*

This was but the Introduction to his plo'. Afterwards, he brought in two Bills of debt, and two counter-Bills of Credit: and further said, One of these Writings shall be to this effect, that you acknowledge your self indebted to me the sum of four thousand Ducats; and for your security, I will make a counter-Bill, wherein I will confess a full satisfaction and true payment of the said debt. The other Writing shall be, That I will procure my Brother to sell unto you an annual Rent that he hath of five hundred Ducats *(a)* *De Juro*; and when this Bill of Sale shall be made over unto you, you shall return the same unto him again, giving him full power to dispose thereof as he pleaseth. And further, by a Writing under your Hand and Seal, you shall acknowledge, that this was but a pretence, and that really those five hundred Ducats, are, and were alwayes his, and, that you cannot lawfully pretend any interest in them.

*(a) Juro is  
a royal rent  
due to the  
Kings of  
Spain for  
their main-  
tenance.*

*Guzmans  
Father  
cunning &  
covetous.*

Knowing my Father to be a most subtle and covetous person, and one that had gotten all his wealth by these cheating tricks; I yielded my self to be disposed of as he pleased: for I thought this business could not possibly be any prejudice to me.

*Guzmans  
cave.*

The foundation being thus laid, I continued very

very circumspect; my word in all my dealings, was like a Clock, it struck true, and never went false.

I was not ignorant, That the credit of those *Guzmans* that are great dealers in the world, doth depend *rich appearances.* much upon ostentation, fair shews and flourishes. I made the world believe, that my house, my self, and my wife, dwelt in fulness of plenty, wanting nothing that was for ornament or necessary use.

My wife was extream prodigal, wasting my *His wives* estate without reason, in accompanying of her *prodigality.* Friends, Banquers, Feasts, and other entertainments, besides her excessive bravery in Apparel, Jewels, Dressing, and a thousand other Gallantries: this, concurring with my small Trading, in a short time I began to know my own weakness. My Father was onely acquainted with my Books of Account, and knew what was due to me, and how much I was indebted to others.

And because all men supposed, that those five hundred Ducats of yearly Revenue were my own, I could not want credit. With this prop, *He in a declining condition.* I bore the burthen of my debts, till my back was ready to break; and when I could no longer endure the weight, I suddenly sunk, like a building raised on a sandy foundation. I was now sensible of my ruine; the very thought whereof did much perplex me.

I went to my Father in Law's House, to impart my grief to him. He advised me not to be discontented, for we had a remedy for this disease in our own hands.

I followed him to the *Escrivano de Provincia;*

M m m

The



The publick Notary of the Province ; who was his very intimate Friend. We carried him to *Santa Cruz*, a Church adjoining to the Market-place : there we made in secret unto him, a private relation, how the case stood with us. My Father promised him two hundred Crowns, to finish our business. The *Escrivano* told us, It should be done : but first, said he, Let this Bill of four thousand Ducats, which your Son owes you, be presented ; and we will compound with the rest of his Creditors, for ten in the hundred, and perhaps for less. My Father presented his Bond. I was carried to Prison, and all my goods seized upon. My wife, to add fuel to the flame, brought forth the Indenture for her Dowry.

Guzman  
committed  
to prison.

His Creditors  
appear  
against him.

When my Creditors saw me clapt up, they came all against me, presenting their Bills and Bonds before divers Notaries. But when our Bond was produced, they were forced to yield to that, being the most ancient Debt, and therefore ought to be first satisfied. And the *Alcaldes* seeing it was *Res justificata*, ordered my Father the first payment. My Creditors finding themselves lost this way, tried to imbarck my five hundred Ducats of annual Rent, before specified : but the true owner my wifes Uncle, appears, and defends his own right. At last, seeing the Debt desperate, they were willing to come to composition with me. I demanded ten years time ; which some of them did willingly grant ; provided I gave them good security for the payment according to my own proposition : so I came out of Prison, and enjoyed my liberty ; the *Escrivano* being well rewarded by both parties.

They Com-  
pound.

Guzman  
released  
from prison.

After this storm, I had still a considerable sum  
of

of other poor mens Money in my hands, being deceived by that credit which I had abroad in the world. This was futable to all the rest of my actions; for this was no better then Theft and plain Robbery: yet I still continued with the name of Merchant, and not of Thief, (which indeed was most proper for me;) for never till now did I understand the mystery of this Roguish trick, which is doubtless no better, then to take a Purse in the Kings High-way.

## CHAP. III.

*Guzman prosecutes the success of his marriage till the decease of his Wife, at which time her Dowry returned to her Father.*

**T**Here is more requisite in Marriage, then two pair of legs in one pair of sheets.

My wife was ill acquainted, and less exercised in misery. She had alwayes lived with her Father, where want and necessity were strangers: she was now forced to work; to which being not accustomed, it was the more insufferable for her.

With that little which now remained, I began to buy at dear rates upon credit, and sell cheap for ready money: *Sicut erat in principio*. My Father bought the wares, and I stood engaged.

She that should have been my greatest comfort, proved my greatest affliction; I mean, my wife; persecuting me without cause, except, for that she had made me poor by her ranting. Now was she come to that height, that, contrary to all

*Guzmans wife forced to work.*

*Guzman & his wife at difference.*

truth, she accused me for keeping a wench, thinking by this means to finde so much favour as to sue out a Divorce, and procure a separation betwixt us; not wanting a Lawyer to advise thereunto: affirming that she might lawfully do it.

This grief, of all other, was the greatest unto me: for as Matrimony once contracted cannot be dissolved; so when it is ill conjoyned, it is hard to be endured. I had now served six years in the Marriage-Galley; in which short time I endured (thanks to my good Wife for it) a great deal of misery. He is not to be reputed a bad Husband, who secureth his Wifes Dowry, and hath rather encreased then diminished it.

The first four years we lived in great content and pleasure: but when the Cloth of Gold Kirtle, which was both richly bordered and imbroidered, was to be sold for Gold, and not a thread so big as a spider escaped the melting-pot; when I saw the water up as high as my chin, and that I could not subsist, but must sink, my credit not extending to a farthing-worth of Radishes; I found my self in a straight. And advising with my Father in Law, I was willing to take somewhat a more rigorous course with her: which grieved her so extreemly, that within a few dayes she died of a sharp and violent disease, without any signs of penitency, or desire of receiving the Sacrament.

*The death  
of Guzman's wife.*

My Father in Law alwayes loved me, as if I had been his natural Son, corresponding with me against his Daughter, my Wife. And when he saw his good admonitions would not reclaim her, he would by no means be perswaded to come within her doors: but after her death, he

mourned

mourned for her. We buried this unhappy woman, (for that must be her name) and did all was requisite for her soul.

About a Moneth after, he demanded the Money he had given me for my wifes Portion ; which I returned to him with advantage. We levelled our Accounts, and remained in as good friendship as formerly.

*Guzman  
and his  
Father in  
Law part.*

#### CHAP. IV.

*Guzman being a Widower, goes to Alcala de Henares to study Divinity : he leaves all, and marries again.*

**M**Y wifes prodigality was sufficient to turn me out of my wealth and credit ; but to raise my self to that heighth wherein I was formerly, I had need of the like success I found at Millaine, or such an Uncle and Kinsmen as those were in Genoa, or that another Sayavedra should come and live with me, by whom I might be restored to a better estate then formerly : *Piedra mavediza nunca la cubre moho : I was that rolling stone that never gathers Moss.*

A Preacher discoursing of rich men, I remember he told a story not to be forgotten, of a certain Picture, the upper or middle-part of which piece, was taken up by a rich man, there pourtrayed to the life. On his right-hand stood a Roaring Boy, to fight for him ; on his left a Fool, to make him merry, both expressed in a sitting posture ; under him a Clown ; under the

*A merry tale  
delivered  
in the pulpit  
by a famous  
Preacher.*

Mmm 3

Clown,

Clown, a Merchant; under the Merchant, a Councillor; under the Councillor, a Confessor; under the Confessor, a Physician; under the Physician, the Devil, with a long Chain made of Womens Tongues, which rattled horribly. The rich man had written over his head, *These two I keep*; over the Clown, *I maintain these three*; the Merchants Motto was, *I rob these four*; the Councillors Posie, *I pill these five*; the Confessors, *I absolve these six*; the Physician's, *I kill these seven*; and the Devil had a Label coming out of his mouth, which said, *I carry away all these with me to Hell.*

I considered with my self, What have I now in my House, to satisfy my hunger? a Brick-bat is too hard to feed upon; nor can I rost one of my Rafters.

*He resolves to bee a C'e lyman.* I cannot devise any better or more secure remedy for me, then to enter into sacred Orders, and to become a Church-man, applying my self to study Divinity, and to hear the Lectures read in *Alcalade Henares*. Then will I take my Degree; and when I am qualified for the Pulpit, able to say Mass, and preach a Sermon, I shall be sure of somewhat to eat: and in case this should fail, I will turn Friar, and so live a very safe and retired life: for a *Dominus Vobiscum* did never yet taste of hunger.

The time for the payment of my debts was almost expired; and I was certain, if I did not provide for the storm that was now coming, I might in a short time be utterly lost. The Money that I shall get for my House, will maintain me as a Scholar, though I spend yearly one hundred Ducats. I confess this was an ill consultation, and

a worse resolution, that I should purpose to study Divinity more for the nourishment of my own body, then for the feeding of others souls: *Seria malo un lacio por religioso?* What need a lascivious wanton to be a Priest? Or, *A (e) continent man to marry?* The one is as unfit for the Church, as the other for a Wife.

(e) Proverb  
No hare  
buen casa-  
do un con-  
tinente.

I resolved to be a Clergy-man for no other reason, but to repair a broken fortune, to fill my belly, and to be free from my Creditors. I sold my House for almost the price that it cost me. The Schools at *Alcala* were shortly to be opened; and the time approached for the reading of the Lectures. Wherefore I gave my Father in Law power to put out my Money to Use; and making me a Cloak and *Sotana*, and providing my self of Bedding and other Necessaries fitting for a Students Chamber, I departed to *Alcala de Henares*.

It did somewhat trouble me, to submit to the tuition of a Master, who was to command in the House, to sit at the upper end of the Table, to divide the commons, and give to every man his portion upon his Plate, with his filthy, and perhaps mangie, fingers, dirty nails and long and crooked, as those of an *Ostriche*, distributing the porridge in lettuce-leaves, to make it reach the further.

Guzman  
enters him-  
self amongst  
the Pupils.

After I had studied the Arts and Metaphysics, and observed those publick Lectures required of me, I took my Degree, and began to frequent the Divinity-Lectures; where there sometimes preached a Parson, that by reason of an excessive heat in his body, would preach bare-breech'd; and likewise on his bench would sit

A merry  
tale of a  
Parson with  
a hot con-  
stitution.

without any thing between his flesh and the board. I (that hated idleness) being thus informed, brought a Turf of an Ants-hill, and laid it on his seat: which the Parson seeing when he came to sit down, was over-joyed, supposing the Sexton had brought him that grass to sit on, he knowing his condition. But, good man, 'twas otherwise; he sits down, and after a-while ariseth to his Prayer, which he had almost ended before their biring disturbed him: who, when they had began, were so violent, that making the Parson forget where he was, quoth he, The Word of God, &c. (and making a full stop, scratching his breech) sayes, Good people, *The Word of God is in my Mouth, but I think the Devil is in my Tail.*

Guzman  
deserts his  
study.

When I was upon my last year, and ready to commence Batchelor of Divinity, my sins carried me one evening to *Santa Maria del Valle*, where are certain Pilgrimages, and places of Devotion: whither we often go, not to give Alms to the poor, or any other pious intention; but quite contrary, to commit a thousand offences against God.

Hence rose the terrible storm of my tempestuous life, the destruction of my wealth, and the overthrow of my credit.

His absence  
day at  
Church.  
He is in  
love with a  
young Maid.

At my entrance into the Church, I saw a company of women, some of them extream beautiful. I went, as my custome was, to the Font, where the Holy Water was. I dipp'd in my right hand; and that little Water I took out on the tops of my fingers, I sprinkled on my forehead: but having my eyes and thoughts towards the fair herd, not once offering to look on the

Altar,

Altar, or the Sacrament; I put forth my Leg, and in stead of blessing and crossing my self, I made a hundred love-signs.

When I saw them go out of the Church, I rose up and followed them.

They went through a Grove of Aldar-Trees, towards the River side; and in a pleasant Meadow they made the Grass their Cushions, and so sat down, taking out some junkets they had brought with them to eat.

This good Company consisted of a Widow, a good honest Hostess, and her two Daughters, fairer then *Castor* and *Pollux*, with some other of their Friends and Acquaintance. These did but serve as foys to set off the lustre and beauty of my Hostesses eldest Daughter, whose name was *Grace*.

I was generally well known in *Alcala*, having *Guzman* a resided there above seven years; and was ~~as~~ good scholar counted one of the best Students in the University: and, which was a greater addition to my credit, I was held to be very rich: Attributes that have power to perswade the hardest hearts to love.

As they were beginning their <sup>(a)</sup> *Merendar*, <sup>(a)</sup> Or, I insinuated my self into their company; where- <sup>repast</sup> in I could nor be so crafty, as they were subtil. <sup>between</sup> <sup>Meals.</sup>

When we had done eating, a Maid-servant took out a Viol which she had brought under her <sup>He gets ac-</sup> <sup>quaintance</sup> <sup>with the</sup> <sup>Maid.</sup> *Mantle*; and *Grace* presenting the instrument to me, requested to hear me play, because they were disposed to dance; which they did excellently well: and my new Love so much exceeded them, that I was now more enflamed then before.

When



*Her education good.*

When they were weary, and sat down to rest themselves, I delivered the Viol into her hands from whom I received it; beseeching her to grace that instrument with a song: which she did, without any nicety or coyneles; performing both so sweetly, that she seemed to have arrested Time; so rarely did her Voice accord with the Viol.

To my grief, the Sun had almost declined; and now we prepare to walk home: and I was so happy as to lead my Mistress by the hand, feigning to walk more at ease. We let the rest of the Company pass before us.

I conducted her to her House; from whence her Mother would not suffer me to depart, till I had been in her private Chamber: There she feasted me with a Collation of Sweet-meats.

Afterwards I took leave; and desiring that I might again enjoy the like favours from them, went to the Colledge.

*Guzman love-sick.*

That night my sleep was short, my thoughts confused, and my minde discontented.

I was now in Loves strongest Prison, it being left to my choyce, whether I would marry her, or not.

*He marries again.*

Her Mother offered me her House, and the use of all that was in it. She was extream kinde, and ready upon all occasions to serve me. Wherefore I left all other means of advancing my self, esteeming this the best.

In my youth I carried a Basket; and now at riper years, my Mansion was an Inne or common Victualling-house; and I wish to God that my troubles might here end.

## CHAP. V.

*He leaves the University, and carries his wife with him to Madrid, from whence they were both banished.*

**I** Leap'd from Batchelor of Divinity, into the Degree of a Master of prophane Love, and became a Licenciate.

In this my second Marriage, I took so much content and pleasure, that I periwaded my self, *Que nunca por mi se commencara el tocino del pa- Proverb.*  
*rayso: That I should never fall from this felicity, but alwayes continue the most happy man in the world.*

But I would not consult with *Understanding*; I put *Reason* away from me, nor would believe *Truth*, that told me, It was her Beauty, and not Devotion, that I intended in this action; and, that marrying with a fair woman, many cares must of necessity be offered to me, for fear she should prove common. For the present, I lived very pleasantly; and, (a) *He that is not (a) Proverb*  
*blest'd with a Mother in Law, is ignorant what a blessing he wants.* Losque no gozen de suedro, no gazan de cosa buena

She used me as if I had been her own natural Son: and, as my wife brought me but a small Portion, so she had the less cause to put me to superfluous expences; but being young and flexible, I rul'd as I thought fit.

My Kindred esteemed themselves much honoured by my person, because they knew I was every

every way superior unto them : for he that shall be linked in Alliance with those that are of greater Rank and Quality then himself, shall never want Lords to serve, Judges to fear, and Princes to whom he must pay perpetual tribute.

Guzmans  
happiness.

But my Mother in Law was tributary unto me, my Sister in Law was my slave, my Spouse did adore me, and all the House was subject to my commands.

In all my life I never was so free and exempt from the cares and troubles of the world. I minded nothing but eating, drinking and sleeping ; not liable to any payment to the value of one *Maravede*, either for House-Rent, or to the King.

That which grieves us most in our temporal losses, is the remembrance that we did possess them : so that the more (in injoying them) is our happiness, the more sensible in losing them is our misery.

His miser-  
able estate.

My Father in Law being dead, his Creditors came upon my Mother with an Execution, by vertue whereof, they seized and carried away with them all that they found in the House. I was afraid, that accounting my self and my wife as part of the Household-goods, they would have taken us away likewise. They did little better ; for by violence they thrust us out of doors, that we might not hinder them from disposing of the Goods.

Proverb.

The Creditors for their benefit, exposed the Inne to those that would give most yearly Rent for it. *Quen de tu officio es, es tu enemigo : There is no man so great an enemy to thee, as he that is of thy own Trade and Profession.*

This

This Inne was formerly in very good credit ; so that they went out-vying one another, (every one striving to have it) still out-bidding my Mother, who desired to Rent it of them, because she and her Daughters had been there bred up ; which consideration made her offer more then it was worth. In conclusion, we had possession again of the House ; but so inhauced in the Rent, (thanks to others malice) that we were scarce able to buy our selves bread and pilchards ; for the Rent, like a Sponge, did suck up all our gains, whilst we were ready to perish for want of food.

I purposed to try what profit would acrow to me by my Learning, I applied my self to the study of Physick ; my encouragement arising from those good Grounds which I had from the Metaphysicks ; it being an usual saying with us, That, *Ubi desinet Philosophus, ibi incipit Medicus ; & ubi Medicus, ibi Theologus* : Where the Philosopher ends, there the Physician begins ; and where the Physician, there the Divine. But being deceived in this alio, I resolved not to sell my honour to Scholars, of whom nothing is to be gotten but half-peny-loaves and hat-bands.

Guzman  
Audies  
Physick.

*No pude ser el corvo mas negro que las alas* : The Crow cannot be blacker then his wings : Nor could my condition be much worse, then now it is ; wherefore I made up all that little that I had into one Fardle, all which a man might have in a manner put into a Snails shell, for one little old worm-eaten Chest contained all the Household-stuff I had : which being put into a Cart, my wife and I sitting thereupon, we marched to Madrid ; where, as soon as we arrived, her beauty

*Guzman &  
his wife  
much obli-  
ged to a  
Broker in  
Madrid.*

beauty mustered together a great number of Vol-  
untaries, that offered their service unto her, and  
were willing to hazard their Lives and Fortunes  
for her sake. But he, who was most forward to  
accommodate us at that time, was a Broker in  
the High-street, who brought us to a Friends  
house of his, where we were kindly entertained:  
and because we could not on a sudden make pro-  
vision of such things as were needful for us; He  
sent us in good store of Meat ready drest, by one  
that kept a Cooks shop; and in the evening came  
himself to visit us. After some Complements,  
I asked him, How much he had disbursed for us?  
But he seeming to make light of it, told me, It  
was a trifle not worth naming; assuring me, that  
he was ready to serve me in things of more va-  
lue, whensoever I had occasion. At last, with  
my importunity, he told me it came to eight  
Royals; which I presently paid him: and  
throwing my Cloak on my shoulders, I went  
into the City, leaving him to converse with my  
Wife.

At my return, I found a stately Supper provi-  
ded for us: I was not inquisitive to know from  
whence it came, because my Hostess told me,  
That we were that night to be her Guests;  
as also the honest Broker: and from that Sup-  
pers acquaintance, we became very intimate  
Friends.

*(b) In  
Spain they  
use at their  
Comedies, to  
entertain  
the women  
with rich  
wines cool'd  
in snow, &  
Sweet-  
meats.*

He would come to my Lodging, and often in-  
vited us to sup in his Garden of Pleasure; some-  
times he would carry us to see a Comedy, and  
there bestow upon us a (b) Collation.

Notwithstanding all this honest Brokers en-  
deavors, I was not satisfied: for it was not ne-  
cessary

cessary Food and Raiment that would content me. I coveted to live like a King, to be courted with extraordinary observance; and that they should buy with Gold, the sweet conversation they were to enjoy, and the liberty I gave them by going forth my self, that they might have the freer access.

I had now found out one that did far surpass him both in wealth and merit. I was much troubled, because I knew not now to let this Gentleman know my readiness to embrace his friendship; although I was informed, that he desired nothing more, then to be acquainted with my wife.

I was unwilling to leave the Broker, for this uncertain Gentleman: For, *Mejores pan duro que ninguno: Stale bread is better then none.* I was careful to avoid all disasters, especially, that might happen in my own house: and to prevent all disorder, I resolved that these two should not tread in one path: knowing by experience, That, *No sufre dos cabezas un gobierno: One Kingdome would not admit of two Heads:* (a) Nor, *Two different Birds build in one Nest.* Till at last being certain that my Gallant was in the Net, I told the Broker, I would no longer pay rent for Lodgings, being able to keep House. So the siege was raised, and I began to set up Shop wholly for my self.

With this I entred into a very strict league of friendship.

He invited me often to his House, and would, when I was gone home, send me several curious dishes of meat, giving secret order to his servants, to leave the dishes with me, though they were all of Silver.

It

(a) Proverb  
No se ani-  
dam bien  
dos paxaros  
juntos en  
un agujero

It pleased me very well, to see my wife at her return from some amorous Gallant, to come home laden with Gold and Jewels.

And it grieved me, when I walked the streets in my bravery, with a Jewel in my Hat, and Harband garnish'd with Stones of good value, to hear my Neighbors say, *Sennor Guzman* hath in his Hat one *Cornix* doth out-shine all the rest. But perhaps some of these did envy my good Fortune, and like Goats, did not see their own horns, though they were visible to all the world besides.

*Guzmans  
riches.*

The Goods in my House did daily encrease, like Froath by the Sea-side. I had both Winter and Summer-Hangings, pieces of Arras wrought in *Bruxels*, others of branched Damask, interwoven with Tensel; Beds of Damask, Canopies and Quilts of the same; Turkey Carpets to tread upon, Pillows and Cushions for my Wives *Estrado*, when she was pleased to sit in State. Silver Dishes did run upon wheels about my House. My Trunks would not contain my Wardrobe and rich imbroideries of Cloth of Gold and Silks. My Cabinets were filled with Jewels and Precious Stones. I never wanted Money to Game, but triumphed in plenty.

*Guzman  
banished  
from Ma-  
drid.*

A severe Minister of State was informed of our wicked courses: and after my examination, many witnesses appearing against me, I and my wife were both banished from *Madrid*, as the corrupters of youth, and publick professors of vice.

And now was the tenth year expired, wherein I was to give satisfaction to my Creditors.  
Where-

Wherefore I hired a Coach for our own persons, and two Carts to carry our Goods and People; intending to go to *Sevil*, because I thought those that came from *Pern*, flush with their Gold and Silver, would be more beneficial to us, then the Courtiers in *Madrid*.

CHAP. VI.

*Guzman arrives at Sevil; his wife goes away with a Captain of a Galley into Italy; and he prosecutes his former trade of stealing.*

WE travelled to *Sevil*, *Al passo del bucy*: With the foot of an Ox: for my Wife was fearful the jogging of the Coach should make her a little Dog-sick. Indeed one of these is a great piece of Ladies essence, and the proper passion of a Gentlewoman: nor can they be more without them, then a Barber without a Gittern, or a Spanish *Don* without a Tooth-picker.

I remembred my first departure from *Sevil*, and the Church of Saint *Lazaro*. I saw the Stone whereon I slept in the Church-porch; the steps by which I passed to the holy Chappel, where I so devoutly prayed: and though I was at distance from it, I thus saluted the Patron thereof: O glorious Saint, when I took my leave of thee, I went away with tears, on foot, without company, and a child. Now I return to see thee, rich, attended, and a married man.

I expected to have found all things as I left them; but they were so far from being in statu



*quo prius*, that there was not any shadow or memorial thereof remaining; nor was I was yet certain, that this was the same *Sevil*.

The next day I hired a house in the *Barrios* of Saint *Bartholomew*, paying my Rent before-hand; thither I carried all my Goods.

(a) Gradas  
de Sevilla,  
a place like  
our Royal  
Exchange  
in London.

My wife importuned me to give her leave to see this famous City: and to humour her, I went to the (b) *Gradas*, and procured her a Squire to attend and shew her the most remarkable places in the City. And although there were not so numerous a company of Princes, Dukes, Marqueses, Condes, and other *Titulado's* in it, as in *Madrid*; yet was she well pleased with the situation thereof, and very willing to reside and continue here.

Proverb.

With great diligence and trouble I found my Mother: I was very importunate to have her abide with me; but she would not a long time consent to it; saying, *Que dos tocas en un fuego, nunca encienden lumbre à derchas*: That two white Kerchiefs in one Kitchen, did never yet make a good fire; and, *The Daughter in Law, did seldom correspond with the Mother in Law*. But in the end I prevailed with her, alledging, That I desired nothing more, then that she might live at rest in her old age.

Guzman  
finds his  
Mother, &  
perswades  
her to live  
with him.

I saw in her the ruins of time, and how years consume all things: when I parted from her, she was young and beautiful; now I found her lean, tawny, soothless, her face like an old Apple-*John*, shrivell'd, and full of wrinkles. This made me say to my wife, Thy Youth and Beauties are not perpetual; and if thou dost escape that deformity which age layeth upon thee, yet must thou  
submit

submit to the power of Death, which disfigureth the greatest perfections.

My Mother having advantage of many years experience, advised my wife not to admit into her company the yong Men of that street where-in she dwelt; but (like the Fox) go further off for her prey, because of the infamy and dishonor that she should certainly merit thereby. Concerning the Court-Pages, Students in Law, and University-Scholars, she read the like Lecture; telling her, That they resembled Rooks and Crows, that would smell out flesh at a great distance; but were good for nothing but to peck at it and be gone.

*The good  
counsel of  
Guzmans  
Mother to  
his wife.*

She wished to shut her Doors against all married Men: for she could not have a more implacable Enemy, then a jealous woman.

Beardless young Gallants, and Sattin-cheek'd Boyes, she counselled her by no means to entertain; for these conceited, that their strong perfumes and curled locks might deserve any favour from her.

My wife became sick, and weary of the Mother in Law, being somewhat restrained of her liberty, and not so absolute Mistress of her own will as formerly. Wherefore cruel storms and tempests did often arise betwixt them: and because I would not be their stickler, when I saw the *Dolphins* play above water, I constantly went abroad, to preserve my sense of hearing, which I might have lost, if I staid to hear the noise and thunderings they made.

My loving Spouse, because I did not take her part against my Mother, began to hate me perfectly: and meeting with a Friend of hers,

N N N

Who

who was Captain of one of the *Neapolitan* Gallies, that lay in the Road, she exchanged my love for his, carrying away with her all my Gold, Silver, and Jewels into *Italy*.

Proverb.

I have often heard, That he is either a Madman or a Fool, that will seek after his wife when she is once gone from him. And, *Al Enemigo hazer la puente de plata por donde huysse*: That a man should make a golden Bridge for a flying Enemy, and rejoyce at his departure: besides I considered, That, *Mejor solo que mal acompañado*: I should be better alone, then evil accompanied.

She left me extream poor; and having sold and spent all my Household-stuff, I was forced to begin my old Trade.

Guzman  
steals  
Cloaks by  
night.

At night I went into those streets, in which were divers turnings and cross-ways; and sometimes returned home laden with three or four Cloaks; and quickly altering the propriety of these, that I might not be discovered, I sold them for ready Money.

My Mother was much discontented, that I should follow these wicked courses. Such, as she often told me, would bring me to the Gallows. Wherefore she and a young Wench (with whom she lived formerly) agreed to become Partners, and equally to share all their gains.

He picks a  
Gentle-  
mans pocket

Upon the Feast of *San Augustine*, I perceived a Gentleman coming out of his house with good store of Money loose in his left Pocket, on that side where his Rapier hung. I followed him, till coming into a place where there was a great preass of people, thrusting and crowding one another, I gently lifted up his

his Hanger, and nimbly dived to the bottom of his Pocket, letting not one Royal escape my fingers. But the unquiet motion of those that were about me, hindred my hand, being full, to carry it away neatly; by means whereof, some part thereof fell upon the Stone-Pavement of the Cloyster, making a great noise: wherefore I threw all down, and taking out my Handkerchief, I cryed to the people, to stand back and make room, because in drawing out my Handkerchief, I had scattered all my Money. All very kindly did as I desired them; and the honest Gentleman whom I had thus robb'd, charitably stooped down to assist me, till I had all to the last Royal. I gave him thanks for his pains; and potting out of the throng, went home well contented.

---

## CHAP. VII.

*Guzman being preferred to a Gentlemans service, robs her; is apprehended, and condemned to the Gallies during life.*

**W**HEN I purposed to do any notable Villany, I put on a large Jesuitical Cloak, a broad-verged Hat, a little Band, and a little pair of Breeches, together with all the gestures of outward Sanctity, Submission, Mortification, and good Example; having the true turning up the white of my Eye, a sober Aspect, and a grave Utterance,

Guzman  
received  
into service.

By my hypocrisie, I insinuated my self into the good opinion of a most Religious Friar, who placed me with a Gentlewoman whose Husband was in the *Indies*; where I was, upon his commendation of me, received into her service, and trusted with all her Wealth and Family; the honest Friar being Surety for my fidelity.

She provided me a fair Lodging, and a delicate soft Bed, and all other necessaries that were fitting for me; using me in all things, not as a Servant, but as a Kinsman.

Sometimes she would intreat me to say an *Ave-Mary*, for the health and good success of her Husband. I answered all her demands, as if I had been an Oracle; and with so much Mortification, that I often caused her to weep. By this means I came to rob her, and dishonor her house.

She had in her house a fair white Slave, with whom in a short time I was too familiar. To all the rest of the Servants she seemed a Saint; but to me she shewed her self most lewd and dissolute, as if she had been educated in the publick Stews: yet did she deport her self with so much wisdom and discretion, that none in the house could perceive any intimacy betwixt us. This Slave I promised to redeem, and marry; which made her, like a Spanniel, wait upon me diligently. She furnished me with so many Sweet-meats, that my Chamber was like a Confectioners-shop; my Chest was never without Collarions, curious Linen, and some store of Crown.

My Mistress knew nothing concerning her  
own

own Estate and Wealth ; nor had any other Money, but what she received of me. All her Rents in the City were in my power. I had likewise the command of all her Flocks in the Country, and did take and gather all the fruits and profits thereof.

My design being, when I had a considerable sum in my hands, to depart.

I desired much to go to the *Indies*, and did but want opportunity to imbarke my self.

But my Mitreis had timely notice of her certain ruine, by her Farmers and Tenants, who informed her they had paid in their Rents to me : The Shepherds, That I had sold her Flocks : The Bailiff of her Vineyards, That I had conveyed all her Wines out of the Vaults and Cellars where they used to be kept : and because that of all this, I had not brought in to her one peny, either in Money or Account, she communicated the business to a Kinsman of hers, who promised to use his best interest to make me produce a better account of that part of her Estate, which was in my hands.

The next morning, as I lay in my Bed, an *Al-quazil* came in, commanding me to put on my Clothes, and go with him to Prison. I asked him at whose Suir he arrested me. His answer was, I should know hereafter.

*Guzman*  
arrested &  
carried to  
Prison.

I went with him, very sad and pensive, supposing, that I was committed by Vertue of some *Requisitoria*, or Commission out of *Italy* ; or that my Creditors in *Castile* had found me out, and all my late Thefts in this City were now upon Record.

My Mother living so privately and retired, at

several times I carried thither all that I had stolen from my Mistress.

When the Officers broke open my Chest, they found nothing, but a Bill of the last year, and a few old rags.

She sent a Friend of hers to visit me in Prison, and compound the business; promising, that if I would return into her hands what I had purloined, she would immediately set me at liberty: but I was deaf to all her intreaty, though it were for my own benefit.

The honest Friar hearing of my misfortune, came to advise me, that if I were guilty of the Theft, I should take some speedy course to make satisfaction, that my Reputation might not be utterly lost. I stoutly denied all; affirming, That I was innocent; and, That they had suborned false witnesses against me.

From me, he went to the *Escrivano's* Office, to *Abonar* and defend my Cause, desiring him for Charity's sake to have an especial care of it, because he was perswaded I was a most upright and religious man. The *Escrivano* laugh'd heartily at the Friars commendation of me; shewing him several *Processes* against me, containing a particular Relation of all the Thefts and cheating Tricks I had used. The holy man was ashamed to sollicite my Cause any more; and afterwards became my mortal enemy, because I had abused his favours. He made a full relation hereof to the *Teniente* or Deputy-Lieutenant, who was so incens'd against me, that he commanded the Jaylor to load me with irons, and put me into the Dungeon.

I was at the first well used (for my Cause was  
not

not Criminal) and handsomely lodged. When I was but entred the Priion doors, there presently flock'd about me 20 several Proctors, Attorneys, and Solicitors, who lived by the fins of the people. These set down my Name, and the Cause of my imprisonment: all of them making it a matter of nothing, and an easie suit to end. One of them told me, The Judge was his very good Friend, and favoured all the Causes he brought before him. Another said, That he had a great interest in the publick Notary. A third, That within two hours he would procure me Bail. The fourth, That my Charge was a thing of no consideration; and, that for six Royals he would instantly ingage to free me. One of these I elected to be my Solicitor, giving him in his hand ten Royals; which he no sooner received, but vanished from me, and never appeared more to do me the least service for my Money.

Upon my second examination I was found guilty; and the Jaylor at my return, called me up to clap irons on my legs: but I redeem'd these with five Royals.

The Wench with whom I was formerly very familiar, sent me daily Money, Linen, and whatsoever I writ for.

My Mother hearing upon what terms my Suit depended in Court, resolv'd to part with nothing I had brought to her; sending me a Letter which signified that she was robb'd of all her own wealth, and likewise that which I had left in her possession.

At the Grand Sessions I was sentenced by the Judge, to ride upon at Afs with my face towards his Tail, round the City; to be stript to the waste,

*The kna-  
veries of  
Proctors,  
Attorneys  
and Solli-  
citors.*

*Guzman  
sentenced to  
be whipt.*



waste, and receive one hundred and fifty stripes; the Cryer proclaiming my Offence before me; and this done, to remain in the Kings Gallies six years.

Although I was much grieved at the Judges severe sentence; yet was it some comfort to me, that my Friend *Soto* was condemned to the like punishment: and, that we should, like loving Curs, be fastned together in one Chain. And now despairing of Redemption, I feigned my self sick for fifteen dayes, without coming either out of the Dungeon, or my Bed.

*Guzman  
tries to  
break prison  
and is pre-  
vented.*

In the mean space, I provided my self of Womens Apparel; and shaving my Beard, I clothed my self with it; and casting a Mantle over me, I past with this disguise, through the two Doors that belonged to the Galleries, without being discovered by either of the Porters; and descending to the Door that opened to the street, a Porter which had but one Eye (would to God the other had been out) looking in my Face, knew me, and turned me up stairs. I was presently searched, and found to have about me a Sword, Dagger, and two Pistols; which aggravated my Offence, and made my Accusation Criminal.

*He is con-  
demned to  
the Gallies  
during life.*

Report of this Adventure was made to the Judge; who fulminating a new *Process* against me, they condemned me to the Gallies during life,

## CHAP. VIII.

*Guzman is taken out of the Prison of Sevil, and carried to the Port to be put into the Gallies; he relates the success of his journey.*

**T**He next day we were assembled together, and chained with four strong Chains, to each other; every one of us receiving a testimonial of his Sentence: and being thus prepared, we were delivered into the custody of the Commissary, to be conveyed by easie Journeys to the Sea-side.

In this equipage we went out of *Sevil*, to the great grief of our Parents, who accompanied us out of the Gates, tearing their hair, and expressing a thousand signs of sorrow. I was *Solus cum solo*, Left alone without any Friend; for my Mother came not to take her leave of me, and give me her blessing: which added much to the load of my misfortune.

Early the next morning, going to a place called *Las Cabeas*, we saw coming towards *Sevil* a poor fellow driving a great herd of young Pigs; and passing the word from one to another, we presently put our selves in the form of a half-Moon, and so encompassed the Drove, that by force every one of us made free purchase of a fat Pig. The Clown entreated the Commissary to command us to restore them again: but he expecting a part of the Prize, suffered us quietly to enjoy them; leaving the poor man to seek some

*The slaves  
rob a poor  
Country-  
man of his  
Pigs.*

some other remedy for his Goods. At noon, when we came to our Inn, the Commissary called to us for his share of the Theft: And there was a great tumult amongst us, who should part with his Pig to the Commissary. I thought that in the carriage of this business, he might justly blame me more then the rest, because my Understanding did exceed theirs. Wherefore I said to him, (Sir) If it please you, seeing there is a strong guard upon us, to command me to be unchained, I will dress for you my own Pig; for I have still remaining some reliques of a good Cook. He thankfully accepted of my civil offer, and caused my Chain to be knockt off; setting a Guard of two Souldiers over me, to prevent my escape.

At the same time, three Travellers came in to refresh themselves: The Commissary kindly saluting them, entreated them to dine with him. One of them taking off his Port-mantua from his Mule, brought it in; and sitting down with the rest, he placed it betwixt his Legs under the Table: he laid by him likewise his *Alforias*, wherein he had a Cheese and a Bottle of Wine, and a Gammon of Bacon; but he seemed to be most careful of his Port-mantua. I called to my Hostess for a Knife, which I hid in the sleeve of my Doublet; and putting a Jar of water under the Table, and in it a Bottle of wine, that the Commissary might have it fresh, and cool: As often as I stooped to fill him a Glass of wine, by degrees I unbuttoned the Port-mantua: and finding a fair opportunity, I cut a great slash in it, and took out two small (but weighty) bundles, which I conveyed into  
my

Guzman  
robs a Traveller.

my (a) Galley-flops; buttoning the cover there- (a) Or large  
of over the cut, that it could not be discerned. Breaches.

After Dinner, the Travellers departed, and we were commanded to prepare to march: and before they brought me to my Chain, I went to my friend *Soto*, and gave him my prize to secure for me. He received it with much joy; and killing his Pig, he thrust both the parcels into the belly of it, placing the intrails before the mouth of the wound, that they might not be perceived.

VWhen I was going to be made fast, I entreated the Commissary to do me the favour, that I might be filed next to *Soto*. He willingly granted my request, causing the other to be chained in my place.

As we went, I asked *Soto* how he had disposed of those bundles I delivered him. He seemed to look strangely upon me, as if he had never received any such things of me: which made me suppose that he was drunk, and so did not at present remember them. I urged him to return them to me, telling him the place where I gave them to him. But he protested he knew not of what I spoke: asking me if I were mad to request that of him, which I never delivered. *Soto cheats*  
*Guzman.*

I cannot express my own trouble, to be thus unhand somely dealt with, by one, to whom I had done so many good offices.

He persevered still with many Oathes, Blasphemies and Curses, to affirm that he was innocent in what I charged him with: insomuch that the Commissary hearing him, corrected him with his whip. He desired to know the cause of our contention. I acquainted him with the whole

whole business; whose covetous nature I knew desired nothing more, then to possess what we fought for. He commanded *Soto* to give him that he received of me. He stoutly denies the receipt of any such thing. The Guards search him; but finde not the least mark or sign of them.

When the Commissary saw, that neither persuasions nor threatnings would move him to confess the truth, he commanded he should be put upon the Rack. *Soto's* flesh was too delicate and tender, to endure so great torture; which made him presently acknowledge whither he had conveyed them. They took his Pig from him; and looking in the belly thereof, found the two bundles, in both which was a *Rosario*, or set of Beads, of the purest Coral that ever I saw; each Bead having its Cap of Gold, and set out with curious enamelling.

These the Commissary put into his pocket, promising to give me what in reason I could demand for them.

*Soto* was so enraged, that they were forced to separate us; and afterwards to put iron handcuffs upon his hands, because he was continually throwing stones at me.

We came to the Gallies at the very time when they were calking and rigging, and making all ready to go to Sea. The Commissary received from the Kings *Alquazil*, a Discharge for the delivery of so many Slaves. And afterwards went away, without taking any notice of me, or giving me that satisfaction for my Beads, he promised before so many Witnesses.

We were guarded to the Galley, by certain Moorish

Moorish Slaves with half-Pikes, tying our hands with leather thongs they had for that purpose: being on board, we were commanded to retire to the Poop, till the Captain and Pilot did call us by our Names, and place us in our several Banks. I was allotted to the second Bank, opposite to the Cook-room, and near to the Pilots Cabbin. And *Soto* (thanks to my sins that brought this punishment upon me) was placed in the *Paron*, or Masters Bank: I wish he had been at a greater distance from me.

They installed me in my Seat, and put on the King's Robes upon me; two shirts, two pair of Linen Breeches, a coloured Wast-coat, and a red Cap.

I was scarce warm in my seat, when a base under-Barber with his Razor, made my Head and Beard as bare as my hand. This did somewhat trouble me, because I esteemed both as a great Ornament; few men in *Spain* having a better head of Hair, then mine.

I comforted my self with this consideration, That those who had lived far better then I, were fallen into far greater miseries. And although it be most certain, that there is not any life so miserable as that of a Galley-slave, yet was it not half so bad as that which I endured with my first-wife.

A young man that served the *Alquazil*, came and put Fetters upon my Feet, and Manacles on my hands; chaining the rest of our Bank so fast, that it was impossible they should stir: they gave me my allowance, which was twenty six Ounces of Bisket. It was *Dia de Caldero*: The  
Caldero.

*Caldron-day*, for the boiling of Flesh; and being unprovided of a wooden-dish, I was cheated of my share of Beef: nor had I experience enough to soak my Bisket in the Broath, but eat it dry, as all fresh-men do at first, till time teach them the use of their Arms.

Our labour at present was not much: for whilest they were rigging and calking of the Gallies, we onely served to row towards the shore when we were commanded, and to provide Boughs to defend the Tallow from the heat of the Sun.

And because I already found, that I wanted an Angel to guard and attend me, I elected the Pilot to be my Protector; and the rather, because the Captain had given him Authority over us, disdaining to trouble himself with the Slaves.

*Guzman insinuates himself into the Pilot's favour.*

The Pilots Cabin adjoyning to my Bank, by that means in a short time by degrees, I screwed my self into his favour. I made his Bed, brush'd his Clothes, wash'd his Linen, and was in every respect so diligent about him, that he presently ordered, to have me removed from my Bank, to wait upon his person.

*The exercises of the Galley-slaves.*

There did I learn to knit Stockings, to make Buttons both of Silk and Hair, as likewise false Dice, and Tooth-pickers, of sundry inventions and colours, nearly gilded; wherein my self excelled above all the other Slaves.

We were enforced to go with our Galley to *Cadix*, to furnish our selves with Masts, Yards, Sails, Pitch, Tar, Tallow, and other necessaries.

This was the first time that I proved the hard

hard labour of a Galley-slave : for when we anchored, I was so weary and drowzie, that I went to sleep before the Pilot my Master.

Opportunity makes the Thief. When my Comrades perceived me to be so fast, two of them combined together to rob me of my Money, which I had strongly sewed to my shirt. They did it with much facility ; and doubtless I had never recovered it, if the *Alcalde* had not been my Friend. *Guzman robb'd by the galley-slaves.*

The next morning, whilst my Master was dressing himself, I related my misfortune to him.

Upon this information, he caused the *Alcazils* Servant to give to every one of the six adjoining Banks, fifty blows with a Ropes-end, examining them if they had seen or heard of this stoln Money. After this punishment, to make their pains complear, they were wash'd with salt and vinegar.

There was a Moor, who when his turn came to be beaten, confessed, That he had seen his Companion the night before, go from his own Bank to mine ; but wherefore, he knew not. The accused party pretended that he was intangled in that Chain which belonged to my Bank ; and, that he came thither to free himself.

But the Pilot being not satisfied with this excuse, he himself gave him above two hundred stripes with the hoop of a Hogthead.

At last he confessed, that he had stoln it, though it were not now in his possession : having given it to a Slave of another Bank to keep for him.



He was afterwards lash'd for his offence: and my Money was returned to me, which I gladly received from my Masters hand.

---

### CHAP. IX.

*Guzman prosecutes that which happened to him in the Galley; and, by what means he purchased his freedom.*

A Gentleman in our Galley, who was the Captains Kinsman, had lost eighteen links of a great Gold Chain he wore about his Neck, which were worth fifty Crowns: nor was it ever known who had them, although all his own and the Captains Servants were put to the lash.

To prevent the like misfortune, the Captain advised his Cousin to commit his Apparel and Jewels to the charge of some trusty Galley-slave; assuring them, That whatsoever he should deliver to their custodies, they durst as well be hang'd as not give him a good account of it.

The Gentleman took his counsel: and upon inquiry who was the fittest man for his purpose, I was recommended to him for the most sufficient. He desired the Pilot to consent that I might be his Servant: which he could not deny, although he was unwilling to part with me.

I was no sooner come into the Poop, but he requested the Captain, that I might walk about with

wish one onely Fetter upon my Leg; because he professed it grieved him to see a man of my parts and abilities, like a Monkey thus tied to a Chain. His suit was granted: by which means I was enabled to serve him with more nimbleness and dispatch. I had an inventory delivered to me of all his Apparel and Jewels, whereof I always gave him a very good account.

*Guzman  
serves the  
Captains  
Kinsman.*

WE were both of us jealous of his own Servants, who, because I had the charge of his *Racameria*, his wardrobe, and whatsoever appertained to him, might easily excuse themselves of such things as they should steal from me.

I was by this service in a state of obliging others unto me, performing many kindnesses to such Slaves as were my Friends and Acquaintance.

*Soto* envying my good fortune, disgraced me as much as was in his power; telling some things truly of me, and inventing others: omitting nothing that might manifest his malice and my shame.

And although I knew him to be the Knife that sought to cut my throat, yet was I never heard to exclaim against him for his daily abusing me.

This *Soto* was very intimate with my Masters Page, and promised him a pair of fine Stockings of his own knitting, if, as he waited at Table, he could handsomely steal some piece of Plate, and hide it in my Pantry or Dispence, where I kept my *Padrons regalos*, and other necessary provision; alleging, that my this means himself and fellow-servants should again be received into favour.

*Soto's malice against  
Guzman,  
and his plot  
to disgrace  
him.*

The Page liked well this motion ; and having that day a fair opportunity, he took up a silver Plate ; and lifting up a little board, hid it in one of the sides of the Galley.

*The effects  
of hatred.*

When the Cloth was taken away ; going to gather up my Plates in a Basket, as my custome was, I missed one of them : and when I had searched every corner, and could not finde it, I presently published my loss, that it might be the sooner recovered. My Master and the Captain did at first believe that some of his own Servants had done it, to disrepute me : but my two Enemies Soto and the Page reported, that abusing my Masters favours, I had stoln and conveyed it away, that others might be blamed.

This Traytor the Page, advised my Master, because I had not as yet gone out of the Poop, to search my Pantry ; which he ordered to be done : and finding it where themselves had hid it, they came with great joy, proclaiming, That my Villany was apparent, and that none but my self could possibly hide it in that place.

My Master having taken me in the negative, this confirmed his suspicion : and the *Alphaxils* Servant was commanded by the Captain, to give me fifty stripes. These my Master freed me from, begging my pardon, because it was my first offence ; advising me withall, that if ever I committed the like Crime, I should be severely punished.

After this, I was much discontented ; knowing, that he that had done me this wrong, would doubtless finde occasion to do me a far greater injury.

I entreated the Captain and my Master, to acquit me of this imployment, and that I should be obliged to them, to return me laden with irons to my Bank. But they were the more earnest, that (though against my will) I should serve and attend there all the dayes of my life.

One evening when my Master came from the shore, (as my custome was) I went to take off his Cloak, Sword, and Hat; and give him his Sea-Gown and Cap, which was of green Damask; for these I had alwayes in readines.

The same night, I know not how, unless by the Devils means, the Hat being fallen down from the place where it hung, I found it without the Band, which was very rich, and set with large Gold Buttons.

*Another  
plot of So-  
to's against  
Guzman.*

I searched for it, with the greatest diligence in the world; but to no purpose: for the Hat-band would not appear.

When I acquainted my Master with it; *Ab!* (said he) with a frowning countenance, Now I know thee to be a Thief: I know thy design, and that thou seekest new occasions to desert my service: thou shalt have daily a thousand bastinado's about thy shoulders; nor shalt thou ever serve any other Master in the Galley but my self.

I had not power to reply, so great was my grief to be charged with a Crime whereof I was innocent. And if to justifie my self I had spoke Gospel to them, they would have no more believed me, then *Mahomet* the Prophet of the *Turks*.

When by no means the Hat-band could be found, the Captain commanded the *Alquazil*

to beat it out of me, and not to desist till I had confessed the Theft.

I suffered with admirable patience above three hundred stripes, which made the blood gutter down from my back and shoulders; it seeming to my Master, that my cruelty in permitting my self to be thus whip'd, was greater then his, in commanding it to be done: yet at last, moved with compassion, he caused me to be carried away. Then did they chafe my body with salt and wine-vinegar, which was greater torment then the other.

Some few dayes after, my Master asked, if I would restore the Hat-band: and because I could not produce it, his Servants haled me out of the (a) *Dispensilla*, resolving to beat me to death, rather then suffer me to enjoy what I had stolen. Then did I know what it was to be a Galley-slave; and, that not my self, but my service was respected.

(a) Or a place where provisions are kept.

They fastened Cords to my wrists, and drew me up with a pulley, where I hung in the Air; which was a terrible torment to me. At last they let me down, not to release me, but to lay me on my back cross the Canon which was in the fore-Castle; beating me so cruelly on the belly, that I wanted but little of death.

His cruel punishment

But the Captain fearing he should be accountable for me to the King, if I should die with his extraordinary punishment, commanded to have me carried to my former lodging, to be cured.

By this meanes I was esteemed such a Notable Rogue, that I would rather suffer all the rigour of their Whipping, then lose the

the interest of this my supposed Theft.

They told the Boatswain he should never pardon me when I did offend; but punish me in those sins that were venial, as if they had been mortal: and he, (who durst not do otherwise) did chastise me with unaccustomed blows; sometimes because I did not go to sleep at due hours: or if, to supply my wants, I sold my allowance of meat or bread to others, I was sure to be lash'd for it.

My Bank was neerest the Poop, and therefore the most painful, as being subject to the inclemency of the weather in Summer and Winter. To my custody were committed all the iron implements: I was to spin the Hemp, whereof the smaller cordage were made for the Galley; to sweep, and make clean the Decks, and to be common Swabber; and of all ends of Rags, Flax, Tow, or Ockame, to make wads or wiips for all that came to the Long-house: and this was the utmost of all miseries, as being the meanest and basest office in the Galley.

Soe my Comrade came to the Gallies to preach Repentance to the Moors. He had been the greatest and most remarkable Thief of his time, either in all *Italy* or *Spain*. Being informed that our Gallies were to range along the coast of *Barbary*, he intended with the assistance of some Moors and other Slaves that were of his faction, to revolt, and carry the Galley, either to *Algier*, *Tunis*, or *Tripoli*; for which purpose, he and they were already provided of some weapons under their Banks. But because the Cordage, Cables and Sails, were wholly committed to my charge, he was forced to acquaint me with

*Soe attempts to carry the Galley into Barbary.*

the design; supposing that this business would be more welcome to me than any man, because I was condemned to be a Galley-slave during my life. *Soto* desired to confer with me himself; but wanting an opportunity, he sent a trusty Messenger unto me, desiring my reconciliation and favour, and that I would joyn with him to procure our freedom from this cruel slavery wherein we lived. I returned this answer to the Moor, That it being a very weighty business, and of great hazard and danger, I desired some time to consider of it.

The execution of this, was deferred till Saint *John Baptist's* day in the morning.

*Guzman discovers the rebellion of Soto, and the rest of the slaves.*

The day before the appointed time, I requested a Souldier of his acquaintance, to tell the Captain, that I had a business that concerned his Majesties service, and my own life and honour. The Captain commanded me to be brought before him: where in his presence, and the rest of the Officers, I revealed the conspiracy. They were amazed at my relation, and blest themselves; thinking that I had invented this, to procure some Mercede or favour from the Captain, and that I might be freed from part of my great labour. But when I told them where he should finde their weapons, and by what means they were brought thither, he gave thanks to God, who had delivered him from such eminent danger.

He ordered a Gentlemen, who was Captain of a Squadron, to make diligent search about those Banks that were suspicious; where according to my information they were found.

Presently there was a Process thundered forth against

against all the Offenders: and because the day following was a great Festival, and very solemnly observed amongst us, their punishment was put off till the day following: and the Captain bidding one of the Sea-men make shew of the Flags and Streamers; A nest of Rats was found in the Chest, and amongst other things my Masters Gold Hat-band.

Soto desired to make confession of his sins before his death, to one of the Friars we had on board. He begged my pardon and forgiveness, for the false Witnesses he had suborned against me, about the Plate and the Hat-band, saying, that his purpose was, when they had been Masters of the Galley, to have stabbed me: so great was his malice against me, that nothing but my death could satisfy him.

He and two of his Companions, that were the Head and Chief of the Conspiracy, were condemned to be drawn in pieces with four Galleys; and seven of the other were hanged: which sentence was executed: and all that were found guilty, were condemned to the Galleys for term of life, being first publicly whipp'd on board the several Galleys. The Moors had most of them their Noses and Ears cut off, that by this Mark they might be known to be Rogues upon Record.

This exemplary Justice being past upon the Conspirators, the Captain sent for me, extolling my good nature, Innocency and loyalty; desiring me to forget his former ill usage, he commanded my irons to be taken off, and gave me leave to walk at my pleasure about the Galley, till the Kings Royal *Schedula* should be procured for my absolute



# 216 *The Life of Guzman, &c.*

absolute discharge ; which no sooner arrived, but I was set at liberty.

And here (*Gentle Reader*) I put a point to my Misfortunes, which are truly summ'd up. Thou mayest expect more, if I do not exchange this transitory life, for one that is Eternal; which is the Hope and Life of the Faithful.



**F I N I S.**



or  
ny  
ou  
his  
ch